

NAUSHON DATA

GEN

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01876 5252

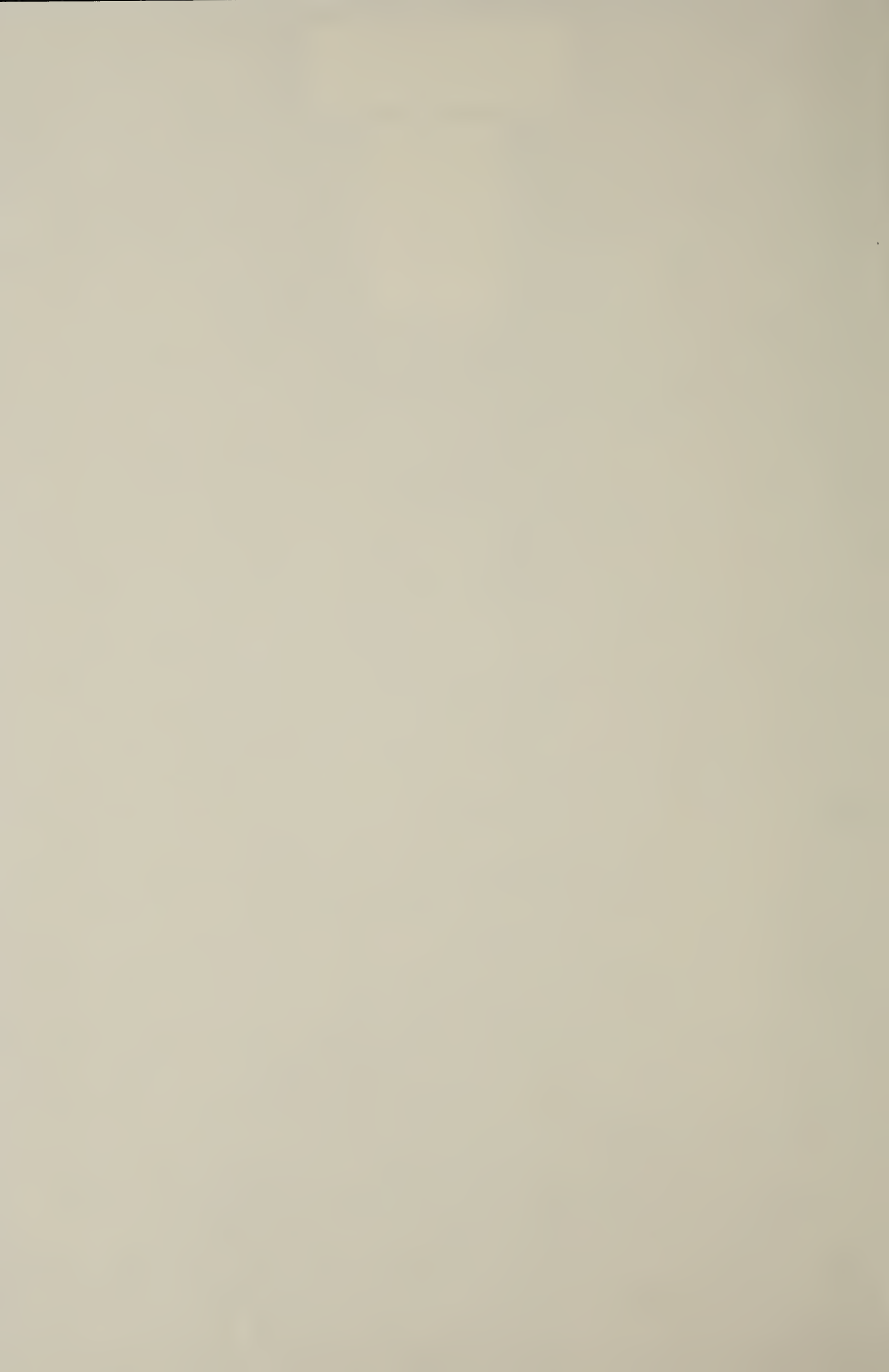
150-

44

120914

GC
974.401
D88EM

✓



NAUSHON DATA



NAUSHON DATA

Collected by
AMELIA FORBES EMERSON

Second Edition

Privately Printed
1984

MILTON, MASSACHUSETTS

Copyright © 1963, 1984
by
The Trustees of the Naushon Trust


Of this second edition of *Naushon Data*,
450 copies have been printed.

This is copy number 208 A

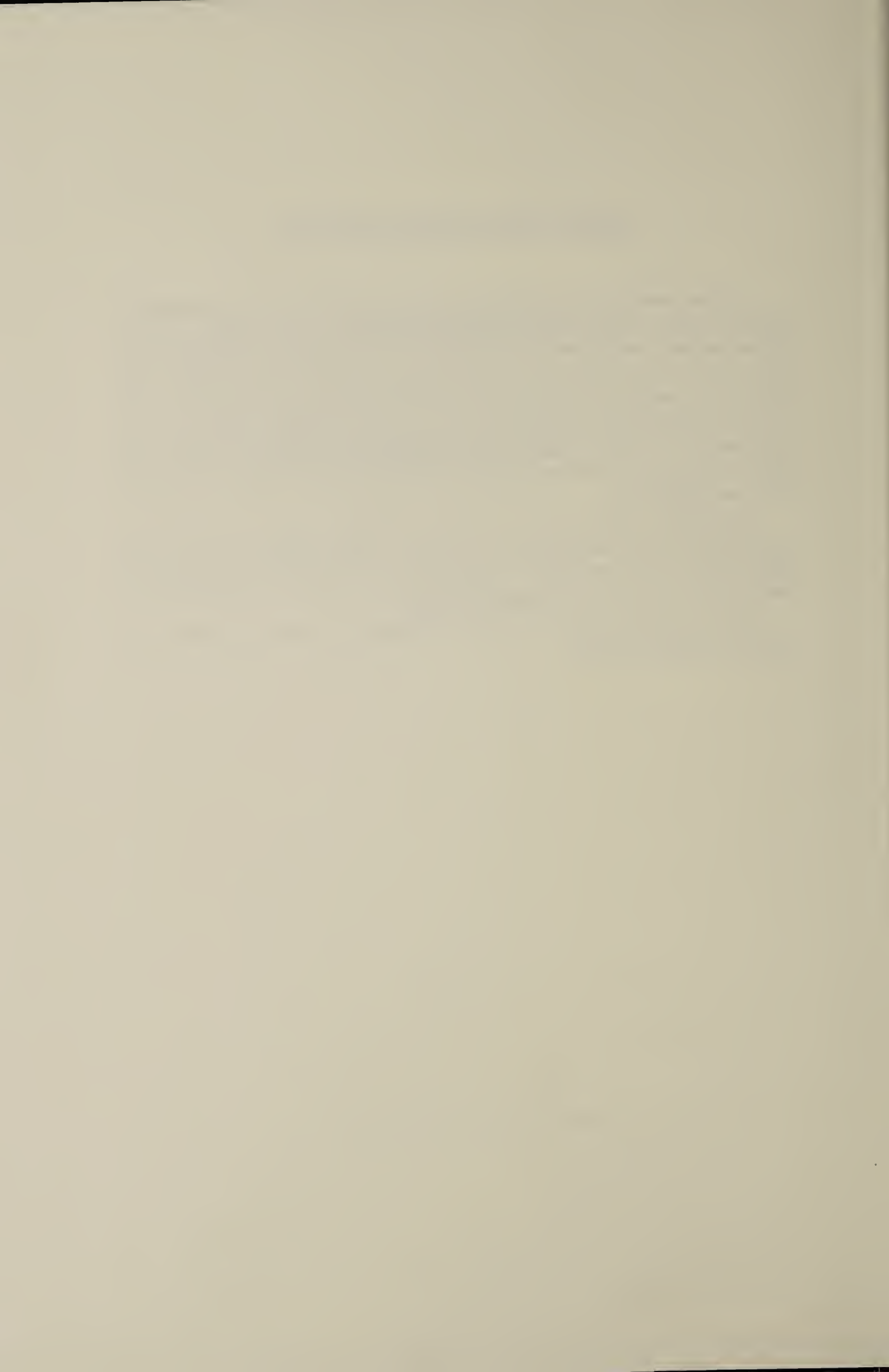
Printed in the United States of America

ABOUT THE SECOND EDITION

As the result of the enthusiastic response to the idea of a new edition of *Naushon Data*, a small ad hoc committee worked for several months, consulting occasionally with Llewellyn Howland III and Richard E. Harding, who have been responsible for the actual production of the new edition. This edition is a complete and exact copy of the original, except for the correction of a few errors and the inclusion of a supplement at the end of the book bringing the text up to date as fully as possible and indicating changes that have taken place in the twenty years since the original edition of *Naushon Data* was published.

Errors that could not be corrected in the body of the text have been marked with a boat hook device (). This indicates that you will find in the back of the book a correction, or in some cases supplementary information, relating to the marked passage.

The committee hopes that you will approve of and enjoy this new edition of *Naushon Data*.



INTRODUCTION TO THE SECOND EDITION

Twenty-one years have passed since the first printing of *Naushon Data* in 1963. All but one (Alice Forbes Howland) of the grandchildren of John Murray Forbes have died, and only one of the Trustees serving in 1963 is still an active Trustee. Life styles have undergone many alterations. The number of people coming to Naushon each year has increased markedly. All of this has put a strain on the Island and has necessitated many changes.

We have, during this twenty year period, emphasized getting the plant and facilities back to their previous levels of efficiency, starting in with the parking and dock facilities in Woods Hole, and ranging through to transportation to the island, farm and staff buildings, Trustee houses, electric generation plant, roads, stone walls and fences, and, in fact, every aspect of Island life. Long-term lessees have been encouraged to improve the upkeep of their houses, and by 1984 the Farm Area has been completely restored.

Expenses have increased markedly in this period — and not solely because of inflation, but also because of increased use of the island and greater demand for its services.

In the 1970s, Massachusetts instituted a statewide revaluation of all property in the Commonwealth. The Trustees and others made a complete survey of all structures, houses, land, and equipment belonging to Naushon. This survey was reviewed by a professional assessor, then submitted to the Town of Gosnold. Land values were increased manyfold, and revaluation shifted the burden to Naushon from a previous level of 46 percent to the current level of 55 percent.

This 1984 edition of *Naushon Data* is intended as an update of information covering the past twenty-one years. But the most notable thing it records is the continuity of harmonious family relationships. May this continuity never be broken.

L.R. III

January 21, 1984



AMELIA FORBES EMERSON (1888-1979)

Amelia Forbes Emerson spent more than ninety years enjoying her family and Naushon. She knew the Island by land and by sea, from early forays on her pony Nellie Bly to rows in her Adirondack skiff when she was ninety. Devoted to and always interested by her family and Naushon, she also had a great intellectual and spiritual curiosity about the world around her. She delighted in history and in returning to Naushon and finding things unchanged there. But she was never bound by tradition. Her motto "Seize the moment" was her way of life. She was intrigued by the latest modern gadgets, closely followed world events, and actively participated in community affairs. At times she would, with a gleam in her eye, whisk members of the family to exotic places at a moment's notice. Her generosity, sense of humor, and zest for life enriched many of our summers at Naushon. With the publication of *Naushon Data* in 1963 and her autobiography, *Recollections and Ramblings*, in 1968, AFE preserved wonderful parts of that heritage for all of us.

In the Naushon Annual Report for 1979, the following tribute appeared:

Amelia Forbes Emerson died on October 24, 1979. She was a Trustee of Naushon for eleven years and Chairman for three. Her generosity and her devotion to the Island and to the family have been a bulwark. She epitomized the family feelings for Naushon. Her remarks to the Shareholders when she handed in her resignation in 1957 ended in these words: "More important than the material increase and expansion [of the Island's plant] is the increase and expansion of our interest, affection, and loyalty to Naushon and all that it stands for in our family history. The more we see of the stereotyped life, the commercialization, and the artificiality of most summer resorts, the more we appreciate the beauty, the simplicity, and the vigor of our Island heritage."



CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

| | |
|--|---|
| DESCRIPTION, OWNERSHIP, PLACE NAMES | 1 |
| Description of Naushon and Adjacent Islands—Status of the Elizabeth Islands— Ownership — Naushon Trustees — Island Managers, 1897 - 1960 — Names and Places — Description of Named Places, Extracts from Notes of W. Cameron Forbes. | |

CHAPTER II

| | |
|--|----|
| TENANTS, FARM HOUSES, FARMS | 20 |
| Occupants of Naushon, Nonamesset and Uncatena — Indian Tenants — The Robin- son Family — Occupancy of Farms, 1684 - 1950 — Farm Houses — The Naushon Farm — Nonamesset — Salt Works at Nonamesset — Porpoise Experiment — Uncatena — Tarpaulin Cove — Tarpaulin Cove Lighthouse — Hollow Farm and Cottage Lot — West End Houses. | |

CHAPTER III

| | |
|---|----|
| FARM OPERATIONS, DREDGING, PEST CONTROL | 56 |
| Farm Operations — Agreement Between J. S. Russell and F. H. Lambert — Ice, Repairs, Renewals — Light Plant — Naushon School — Wells — Bridges and Wharves — Dredging — Harbor Improvements — Hurricanes — Pest Control — Wood Ticks, Experiment. | |

CHAPTER IV

| | |
|--|----|
| FARMING, TREES, ROADS | 76 |
| Farming — Ditching — Improvement of the Land — Herring Fishery — Paving Stones — Cranberry Culture — Trees and Tree Planting — Naushon Woods — Tree Culture — Fruit Trees and Vines — Named Trees — Wood Cutting — Roads — Naushon Map — Road List. | |

CHAPTER V

| | |
|---|-----|
| SHEEP, DEER, GAME | 131 |
| Sheep — Deer — Deer Hunts — Game — Naushon Game Association — Fish. | |

CHAPTER VI

| | |
|---|-----|
| FAMILY SKETCHES, HOMES, COMMUNICATIONS, TRANSPORTATION . . . | 163 |
| Biographical Sketches — Naushon Family Houses — Community Establishment — Communications — Cable and Telephone — Boats — Barges — Yachts — Captains — Transportation — Mules — Horses and Ponies. | |

CHAPTER VII

| | |
|--|-----|
| U. S. ARMY, OCEANOGRAPHIC LEASE, WOODS HOLE PROPERTY . . . | 200 |
| Army Installations — Woods Hole Oceanographic Institution, Installations on Nonamesset — Woods Hole Property. | |

CHAPTER VIII

| | |
|---|-----|
| FAUNA, FLORA, BIRDS, 1928 REPORT | 208 |
| Fauna and Flora — Plants, Trees and Shrubs — Birds Seen at Naushon — Rare Shell — Extracts from Report by W. Cameron Forbes, December 27, 1928. | |
| SOURCES | 223 |
| Sources — Papers Deposited in the Office of J. M. Forbes & Co. — Memorandum of Deeds in Relation to Naushon Estate Recorded in Duke's County Land Records. | |
| INDEX | 227 |
| SUPPLEMENT, 1984 | 236 |

NAUSHON DATA

Chapter I

DESCRIPTION, OWNERSHIP, PLACE NAMES

Naushon records have been kept, in one form or another, over a period of more than three hundred years.

As time passes and conditions change it is possible that the existing deeds, papers, note books and other sources of information may become scattered or lost. It has, therefore, seemed worth while to gather together what facts are now available.

This collection is limited in scope. It deals with matters of ownership, occupancy, management and farming; touches on the older generation of the family and has partial records of boats, horses and lists of trees, plants and birds. It does not include, however, finances, family activities nor any of the events of the summer life which we all associate with the Island.

It gives a bird's eye view of the material progress of Naushon under the three major owners, the families of Winthrop, Bowdoin and Forbes.

It is assumed that those who are interested in the past have already read, or glanced through, the "Early History of Naushon Island" and therefore most of the facts and figures there given are not repeated here.

Sources of information are early deeds and papers and a priceless Farm Record, largely written by William W. Swain, covering the years from 1843 to the time when the management was taken over by John M. Forbes and continued by him into the '80s. These, and four volumes of the Trustees' Minutes dating from 1899 to 1933 are stored in the office of J. M. Forbes & Co. The Mansion House Books have been an endless store of information and the books of the Stone House and Uncatena have supplied many details. Since 1933 the Annual Reports of the Trustees have been the main source.

It is to give answers to some of the questions which are asked about Naushon, without the digging and delving necessarily involved, that this collection has been made.

DESCRIPTION OF NAUSHON AND ADJACENT ISLANDS

On the southeast coast of Massachusetts, in the Township of Gosnold, across the strong tides of the Woods Hole channel lie the Elizabeth Islands. They lie in a southwesterly direction and divide Buzzards Bay from Vineyard Sound.

The Naushon property originally consisted of five islands, Naushon, Uncatena, Nonamesset and the East and West Buck Islands, and to these were added, in 1867, the three small Weepecket Islands off the north shore of Naushon. Two of these are rapidly washing away.

According to Thomas L. Winthrop the dimensions were:

| | |
|------------------|--|
| Naushon, | 7½ miles long, averages 1½ miles wide, totals 5560 acres |
| Nonamesset, | 1¼ miles long, averages ½ mile wide, totals 360 acres |
| Uncatena, | ¾ mile long, averages ½ mile wide, totals 91 acres |
| <hr/> | |
| Total 6011 acres | |

According to the H. H. Crapo survey of 1837 the total was 5366 acres. In about 1828 the bridges were built which connect Uncatena, Nonamesset and the Buck Islands with Naushon, thus combining all in one.

The land consists of a few level stretches and of valleys and hills which rise to the height of about 170 feet at the highest point in the central ridge of the Island.

At the east end of Nonamesset and all of Uncatena are open fields, formerly cultivated but now growing up to huckleberry bushes and blackberry vines; then comes a region of woodland, largely beech and oak but with a scattering of other trees, then come open hills known as "the Desert", once the main pasturage for the Island flock but now with large patches of broom and bushes. Further to the westward, beginning in the region of Tarpaulin Cove, comes a wider strip of forest, and beyond that, at the West End and on the South Bluffs another tract of open hills, once pasture lands but now becoming covered with bushes and the ever-encroaching cat briar and Japanese barberry.

The repeated hurricanes of the past twenty years have seriously damaged the forests, especially along the shores.

The only land locked harbor is Hadley Harbor at the east end of Naushon. Tarpaulin Cove is a deep cove with good anchorage along the south shore on Vineyard Sound, and across the Island opposite Tarpaulin, on the north shore on Buzzards Bay is Kettle Cove.

In the times of Winthrop and Bowdoin the land was let to tenant farmers and divided into about half a dozen farms. These tenants often occupied the

farms for long periods, even several generations, and they cultivated the land, raised stock, built roads and stone walls and made a comfortable living.

After the middle of the 19th century the tenant farming was largely given up, caretakers were placed at Tarpaulin Cove and the West End and the Island became more and more used as a summer residence for the owners and their families.

STATUS OF THE ELIZABETH ISLANDS

1641 These Islands, together with Marthas Vineyard, were granted to Thomas Mayhew by the Earl of Stirling in the jurisdiction of New York.

1691 Marthas Vineyard and the Elizabeth Islands were transferred to the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay and thenceforth were in the jurisdiction of Massachusetts.

1863 The Elizabeth Islands were incorporated in the Township of Chilmark in Dukes County until 1863.

In 1863 a petition was brought to the General Court asking that the Elizabeth Islands be taken from the Township of Chilmark on Marthas Vineyard and made into a separate township. This petition was signed by the following residents or owners of the Islands:

| | | |
|--------------------|---------------------|-----------------|
| Henry J. Allen | John M. Forbes | Harry A. Slocum |
| Benjamin B. Church | Daniel Howland, Jr. | Otis Slocum |
| Charles C. Church | Henry P. Macomber | Joseph Tucker |
| Willard Besse | Edward Merrill | W. R. Veeder |
| John Flanders | George N. Slocum | |

Notice was served on Tristram Mayhew, Samuel T. Hancock and John Hammet as Selectmen of Chilmark, and on Dec. 22nd, 1863 they were directed by the town to present a remonstrance.

1864 In spite of the remonstrance the Petition was granted, and on March 17, 1864 the new Town was incorporated under the name of Gosnold, in Dukes County.

OWNERSHIP

| | |
|-------------|---|
| 1641 — 1682 | Owned by Thomas Mayhew, Thomas Mayhew Jr. and |
| 41 years | Matthew Mayhew |
| 1682 — 1730 | Owned by the Winthrop Family |
| 48 years | |
| 1730 — 1843 | Owned by the Bowdoin Family |
| 113 years | |

| | |
|-------------|--|
| 1843 — 1856 | Owned jointly by William W. Swain and John M. Forbes |
| 15 years | |
| 1856 — 1898 | Owned by John M. Forbes |
| 42 years | |
| 1898 — 1932 | Held in Trust by Five Trustees |
| 34 years | |
| 1932 — | Held in name of "The Naushon Trust" and administered by Five Trustees. |

Indians of the Pokanauket branch of the Algonquin tribe owned and occupied these coasts and islands until the coming of the white man.

1602 The Elizabeth Islands, owing to their discovery by Bartholomew Gosnold in 1602 came under the jurisdiction of the English Crown and were included in the territorial grant of James 1st to the Council for New England which he appointed in 1635.

Two of the 40 Patentees of this council were Sir Fernando Gorges and William Alexander, Earl of Stirling, both of whom laid claim to Marthas Vineyard, Nantucket and the adjacent Elizabeth Islands.

1641 The Earl of Stirling asserted his right, and through his agent James Forrett, sold the two larger islands to Thomas Mayhew together with authorization to "plant" upon the Elizabeth Islands.

1654 Mayhew and his son, Thomas Jr., began the purchase of the Indian rights to these islands, the first deed being that in 1654 between Seayk Sachem and Thomas Mayhew of the island called Cataymucke, now known as Naushon.

1663 The proprietorship of all the islands was transferred from the heirs of the Earl of Stirling to the Duke of York and in 1667/8 Col. Richard Nichols, the Duke's representative wrote to Mayhew, "that all the islands except Block Island from Cape Cod to Cape May are included in my master's patent."

1671 The grant was ratified under a Commission of the Duke of York, Mayhew having already bought the Indian titles.

1682 Naushon was bought of Matthew Mayhew, grandson of Thomas Sr. by Wait Winthrop, grandson of John Winthrop, first Governor of Massachusetts.

1682-1730 Owned by Wait Winthrop and, after his death, by his son John.

1730-1843 Period of Bowdoin Family ownership. In 1730, "Catamock or Tarpolin Cove Island, Nonamesset and adjacent islands" were conveyed by John Winthrop to James Bowdoin.

James Bowdoin sold one third of the property to the Lechmere family, one third to his son William and one third to his son James, later Governor of Massachusetts.

The Lechmeres conveyed one half of their share to William Bowdoin and the other one half to James. Thus in 1761 Naushon had two owners, James, the Governor and William, his brother.

James Bowdoin (111), son of Governor Bowdoin, inherited one half of Naushon from his father and obtained the other one half when he married his cousin, Sarah Bowdoin, only child of his uncle William who had inherited her father's half of the property.

Sarah and James had no children. His sister Elizabeth married Sir John Temple and lived in England.

1811 James Bowdoin (111) died and left his Naushon property to his nephew James, son of his sister, Lady Temple, on condition that he adopt the name of Bowdoin, which he did.

1842 James Temple Bowdoin died in England, leaving a son James T. Bowdoin.

1843 William W. Swain and John Murray Forbes bought the property from Bowdoin College and James Temple Bowdoin, heirs of James Temple Bowdoin.

1856 William W. Swain sold his share of the Island to John M. Forbes, who took possession in 1857. Governor Swain died in 1858.

1857-1898 Naushon in the sole ownership of John Murray Forbes.

1898-1932 John M. Forbes died in 1898 and under the terms of his Will the Island property was left in trust, to be administered for the benefit of his lineal descendants by five Trustees, his five children.

His son William predeceased him and his grandson, Cameron, was elected to take his father's place.

Therefore the first five Trustees were;

| | |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| Alice F. Cary | J. Malcolm Forbes |
| Mary F. Russell | Sarah F. Hughes |
| William Cameron Forbes | |

1932 The Trustees; W. Cameron Forbes, James S. Russell, Ralph E. Forbes, Rose D. Forbes and Ellen Forbes declared that the ownership of Naushon and its outlying islands shall be held in the name of, "The Naushon Trust". It was provided that: This Trust shall terminate upon the expiration of 20 years from the death of the survivor of the following Great Grandchildren and Great-Great Grandchildren of John M. Forbes.

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------|
| *John Forbes Amory | G. Donald Forbes |
| *John Copley Amory | *Waldo Emerson Forbes |
| *Walter Amory | Elizabeth C. Forbes (Gordon) |
| Walter Amory Jr. | Marjory Forbes (Elias) |
| Henry Russell Atkinson | M. Hoima Forbes (Cherau) |
| Henry F. Colt Jr. | Ethel (Holly) Forbes (Leon) |
| Mary Forbes Colt | Joan Forbes (Koponen) |
| Ellen Colt (Singer) | Hester A. Howland (Whitcher) |
| Hope Emerson (Sladish) | Judith F. Howland (Cook) |
| *William Forbes Emerson | John H. Hughes |
| Anne Forbes | Michael Paine |
| Alexander Irving Forbes | John F. Russell |
| David Cabot Forbes | Henry S. Russell |
| Elliot Forbes | Robert S. Russell |
| Pauline Forbes (Pappenheimer) | Susan W. Russell (Hoyt) |
| Amelia Forbes (Thomas) | Douglas B. Smith Jr. |
| Florence Emerson Forbes | *Sarah M. Klebs (Stewart) |
| | Jane Stewart (Young) |
| | Mary Stewart (Meath) |
| *died before 1960 | |

1890 In 1890 J. M. F. deeded to William H. Forbes and to J. Malcolm Forbes the tracts of land around their respective houses, the Stone House and Uncatena.

1939 The heirs of William H. Forbes and J. Malcolm Forbes deeded the pieces of land owned by them to the Trustees of the Naushon Trust, in order that all of the Naushon property be held in one ownership. In return they each were given by the Trustees a ninety-nine year lease of the Stone House and Uncatena tracts of land and houses.

NAUSHON TRUSTEES

John Murray Forbes died on October 12th, 1898, and under the terms of his Will Naushon was left to his five children.

His son, William Hathaway Forbes, died in 1897.

| | | | TRUSTEESHIP |
|-------------------------|-------------|-----------------------|------------------------|
| Alice Forbes Cary | (1838-1917) | | 1898-1917 |
| Mary Forbes Russell | (1844-1916) | | 1898-1916 |
| John Malcolm Forbes | (1847-1904) | | 1898-1904 |
| Sarah Forbes Hughes | (1858-1917) | | 1898-1917 |
| William Cameron Forbes | (1870-1959) | Elected June 21, 1899 | Resigned May 7, 1953 |
| Rose Dabney Forbes | (1864-1947) | Elected Mar. 23, 1904 | Resigned Nov. 4, 1934 |
| James Savage Russell | (1864-1951) | Elected June 9, 1916 | Resigned Nov. 20, 1938 |
| Ralph Emerson Forbes | (1866-1937) | Elected April 3, 1917 | Died Mar. 16, 1937 |
| Ellen Forbes | (1886-1954) | Elected April 3, 1917 | Resigned Dec. 6, 1945 |
| John Malcolm Forbes | (1900-1941) | Elected Jan. 4, 1936 | Died Nov. 16, 1941 |
| William Hathaway Forbes | (1902-) | Elected July 2, 1937 | Resigned 1974 |
| Copley Amory Jr. | (1890-1964) | Elected Jan. 23, 1939 | Resigned June 15, 1954 |
| Ethel C. (Forbes) Amory | (1903-1970) | Elected Jan. 1, 1942 | Resigned Oct. 1, 1951 |
| Amelia Forbes Emerson | (1888-1979) | Elected May 8, 1946 | Resigned Aug. 15, 1957 |
| David Cabot Forbes | (1908-) | Elected Nov. 24, 1951 | Resigned 1979 |
| Alexander Forbes | (1882-1965) | Elected Aug. 1, 1953 | Resigned 1964 |
| John Hastings Hughes | (1925-) | Elected Aug. 19, 1954 | Resigned 1965 |
| *Lawrason Riggs III | (1914-) | Elected 1957 | |
| Edith Webster Gregg | (1909-) | Elected 1964 | Resigned 1971 |
| *Holly Forbes Leon | (1929-) | Elected 1865 | |
| *James Dennison Colt | (1932-) | Elected 1971 | |
| *Weston Howland Jr. | (1924-) | Elected 1973 | |
| *Roger L. Gregg | (1934-) | Elected 1979 | |
| *Trustees in 1984 | | | |

ISLAND MANAGERS 1897-1960

1897 James S. Russell, eldest grandson of J. M. F., succeeded William H. Forbes who had managed Naushon for his father during the '70s and '80s. After the death of J. M. F. the Trustees appointed J. Malcolm Forbes as Manager.

1904-1909 On the death of J. Malcolm Forbes his nephew W. C. Forbes was appointed, but he left for the Philippine Islands and Edward W. Forbes was appointed and served until 1909.

1909-1918 Ralph E. Forbes was Manager.

1918-1939 W. Cameron Forbes was Manager and resigned in 1939.

1939-1941 J. Malcolm Forbes was appointed and served for two years until he lost his life off Robinson's Hole on Nov. 16, 1941.

1942-1947 Copley Amory, Jr. served as Manager until he resigned in 1947.

1947-1950 William H. Forbes succeeded Copley Amory Jr. and he resigned in 1950.

1950-1975 David C. Forbes succeeded his brother and resigned in 1975.

1975- Lawrason Riggs III succeeded David Forbes and is still (1984) Manager of the Island.

In Chapter 111 of the "Early History" will be found many of the Deeds and legal papers. Here, therefore, will be mentioned only two Deeds, one the transfer of Naushon from James T. Bowdoin and the President and Trustees of Bowdoin College to W. W. Swain and J. M. Forbes; and the other, from Ward M. Parker to J. M. Forbes.

1843 "Know all men by these presents that we, James Temple Bowdoin of Boston . . . and the President and Trustees of Bowdoin College . . . in consideration of twenty thousand dollars to us paid to wit seven tenths part to me said Bowdoin & three tenths part thereof to said President and Trustees, by William W. Swain of New Bedford . . . and John M. Forbes of Milton, Esquires, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged do hereby give, grant, sell and convey unto the said Swain and Forbes all the Island and Lands in Chilmark in the County of Dukes County which were devised in and by the last Will of Hon. James Bowdoin and consisting of the Islands of Nashaun, Nonamessett, Uncatena & the two Buck Islands, and also all our right & estate in a piece of land now or formerly held in common with Joseph Parker containing about 3 acres more or less lying within Woods Hole Neck in the County of Barnstable."

(long legal paragraph omitted).

Signed in the presence of

Charles C. Paine James Temple Bowdoin
Jos. McKeen for the President and Trustees of
Bowdoin College.

1867

New Bedford, May 2nd, 1867

John M. Forbes

Dear Sir;

I have made a Quit Claim Deed to you of the Weepeekets Islands. Thinking it may be satisfactory to you to know how I came by them, I make the following sketch; The first owners known to me, which is full 70 years ago, were Thomas Davis and William Sanford, both of Woods Hole.

They pastured sheep on the largest Island. I used to go with the sons of David and Sanford to carry sheep and get gulls eggs which were plenty early in the season.

About this time the small pox was brought to Falmouth by southern vessels and very much alarmed the inhabitants, and Dr Francis Wicks petitioned the Town for permission to build a hospital, but not being successful he bought the Peckets of Davis and Sanford with a determination to erect a hospital on the same. The Town, however, after much debate and delay gave the doctor permission to erect a building on Nobska Point where the lighthouse now stands. The Dr. continued to inoculate for some years until Dr Waterhouse of Cambridge introduced the Kine Pock. Wicks then sold the

Peckets to Abner Davis who improved them for a number of years and then sold them to me by *Quit Claim Deed*.

I give you such a Deed as I received from Mr Davis some 40 years ago.

Deed

... "I Ward M. Parker of New Bedford . . . in consideration of \$125. paid by John M. Forbes do sell etc. . . . all my right, title, interest in and to THREE SMALL ISLANDS situated in Buzzards Bay and near the Islands of Naushon and Onkytonky and known by the name of, "the Winepeckets" containing 3 acres more or less.

In Witness whereof I, the said Ward M. Parker, together with Marcia F., my wife have hereunto set our hands and seals this 1st day of May, in the year of our Lord, eighteen hundred and sixty seven.

Ward M. Parker

Marcia F. Parker

NAMES AND PLACES

It is difficult for us to realize that it was only toward the end of the 18th century that the name Naushon was used in official papers and in the letters of the time. Before this there were three names in common use: Kataymucke (spelled in various ways) was the Indian name, and Elizabeth's Isle or Tarpaulin Cove Island were the accepted names.

1694/5 In just one letter from the tenant John Weekes to Wait Winthrop, written in 1694 he speaks of, "the east end of Elizabeths Island, called by the Indians Nashana . . ." but in letters and documents Tarpaulin Cove Island is most frequently used and in the Deeds and legal papers Catomucke and Tarpaulin Cove Island are the official names given.

During the Revolution and from the times of William and Governor Bowdoin Naushon became more and more often used to designate the Island as a whole and Tarpaulin used for the actual Cove.

It is rather surprising that the Indian name Cataymucke, which was always used in early times, fell into disuse and the name Naushon took its place.

Names mentioned before 1843:

Kataymucke or Catomock — name by which Naushon was known in 17th century.

Tarpaulin Cove Island — name by which Naushon was known in 17th century.

Elizabeth Island — name by which Naushon was known in 17th century.
Naushon, Indian name first noted in 1694.

Nonamesset, easternmost of the Elizabeth Islands.
 Uncatena or Uckatinsett, northeast Island of the group.
 Monohansett, originally called East Buck Island, now called West Buck.
 Veckatimest, now named officially, originally called East Buck.
 Newkit, hill at northwest end of Nonamesset, south shore of the Narrows.
 Monsod, southwest point of Nonamesset.
 Weepeckets, three islands off north shore of Naushon, in Buzzards Bay.
 Undequits Hill, on south shore of Naushon, between Molasses Pond
 & Duck Pond.
 Hadley Harbor, Outer, outside the Narrows, Inner, between Narrows
 & Upper Wharf.
 East Buck Island, now officially called Veckatimest.
 West Buck Island, now officially called Monohanset.
 Rattlesnake Neck, northeast point of Naushon, north of Northwest
 Gutter.
 Jobs Neck, point east of Bathing Beach, west limit of Lackeys Bay.
 Lackey's Bay, between Jobs Neck and Nonamesset at Monsod Point.
 Hollow Farm, at end of deep valley on south shore east of Great South
 Bluffs, on Vineyard Sound.
 Cottage Lot, open field with cellar holes on Main Road ½ mile east of
 West End Pond.
 French Watering Place, pond on south shore, west of Tarpaulin Cove.
 Tarpaulin Cove, deep cove and beach on south shore.
 Kettle Cove, opposite Tarpaulin Cove on north shore.
 Rams Head, point west of Kettle Cove.
 West End Pond, in 1833 called Deerwood Lake.
 Goats Neck, south side of Hadley Inner Harbor.
 Bulls Neck, north side of Narrows. Since 1893 it has been an island.
 Northwest Gutter, inlet between Naushon and Uncatena.
 Jim Field, open field south of Pony Pasture, on Bathing Beach Road.
 Mount Surat, high open hill opposite the Weepeckets, northerly side of
 Naushon.
 The Desert, open hills between Yellow and Blue Gate walls.

 PLACE NAMES

| | |
|----------------------|------------------|
| <i>Hills</i> | Don's Hill |
| Mount Surat | Hilltop |
| Strawberry Hill | Peaked Rock Hill |
| Deer Hill (East End) | South Bluffs |
| Deer Hill (West End) | Newkit |
| Mount Cary | Monsod |

Valleys

Glen Elvo or Cohosh Valley
 Imogene's Cradle
 Joshua's Bottom
 Punch Bowl
 Abrahams Bosom
 Eagle Hollow
 Johnnys Saloon
 Hollow Farm
 Pirates Retreat
 Generals Hollow
 Ram Cat Alley or Witches Glen
 The Amphitheatre
 Elfin Glen
 The Alhambra
 The Glen

Swamps

Great Swamp
 Holly Tree Swamp
 Cedar Swamp
 Hay Swamp
 Salt Marsh (west of Lackeys Bay)
 Salt Marsh (below Newkit)
 Salt Marsh (east of West Beach)
 Salt Marsh on Uncatena

Promontories

Rattlesnake Neck
 Rams Head
 Timmy (Uncatena) Point
 Jobs Neck
 Fishermans Island
 Mink Point
 Goats Neck
 Azalea Point

Pastures - Fields

Jim Field
 Calf Pasture Meadow
 Red Gate Meadow
 Mansion House Meadow
 Stone House Meadow

North Pasture
 Pony Pasture
 Harbor Pasture
 South Sheep Pasture
 North Sheep Pasture
 Cove Sheep Pasture
 Cow Pasture
 Protected Field
 Broom Field
 Rye Field
 Nonamesset Field
 Uncatena Field

Woods

Grinnell Woods
 Cathedral Woods
 Black Woods
 Sprout Lands
 Pine Garden
 African Jungle
 Pershing Grove
 Coolidge Grove
 Beech Orchard

Beaches

South Shore Beach
 Crescent Beach
 Mount Surat Beach
 Silver Beach
 Tarpaulin Cove Beach
 West Beach
 Molasses Pond Beach
 Uncatena Beach
 Rattlesnake Neck Beach
 Breakwater Beach
 Veckatimest Beach
 Treasure Trove Beach
 French Watering Place Beach
 Fishermans Island Beach
 Cedar Island Beach
 Nonamesset House Beach
 Newkit Beach
 Kettle Cove Beach

| <i>Ponds</i> | |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| West End Pond | Ellen P. Endicott |
| Blaneys Pond | Fishing Rock (S. F. H.) |
| Duck Pond | Castle Rock |
| Marys Lake | Holly Rock |
| Sheep Pond | Peaked Rock |
| Mink Pond | Fern Rock |
| Roberts Pond | Seal Rock |
| Edwards Pond | Frog Rock |
| Stony Pond | The Ledges |
| Turtle Pond | Sugar Ledge |
| Molasses Pond | |
| Crane Pond | |
| French Watering Place Pond | |
| Harbor Pasture Pond | |
| Sentinel Tree Pond | |
| Rattlesnake Neck Pond | |
| Fishermans Island Pond | |
| Silver Beach Pond | |
| North Shore Duck Ponds | |
| The Mirror Pond | |
| <i>Rocks</i> | |
| Fishing Rock (J. M. F.) | |
| Stepping Stone | |
| Daniel Webster | |
| | <i>Miscellaneous</i> |
| | Deer Parlor |
| | Cottage Lot |
| | Trotting Course |
| | Gap in Wall |
| | Happy Valley |
| | Elfridis |
| | Fort Ralph |
| | Herring Fishery |
| | The Hermitage |
| | Childs Grave |
| | Fontarabia |
| | Old Fort Tarpaulin |
| | Uncle Hastings Spring |
| | Happy Hunting Grounds |

DESCRIPTION OF NAMED PLACES, EXTRACTS FROM
NOTES OF W. CAMERON FORBES

Abrahams Bosom, deep hollow, south of the Russell Gate, east of Abrahams Bosom Path, and bisected by the west wall of the Pony Pasture. Its name goes back to the days of Governor Swain and was the place where the Island horses were buried. A rock in the valley has the name of Dolly carved upon it, marking the resting place of Ralph Waldo Emerson's horse, which came to spend her last days on Naushon.

It is a fair assumption that the old biblical expression describing a person's death by saying that he was gathered to Abraham's bosom led to giving this name to the hollow.

Coolidge Grove, so called because the ceremonies of naming the oak trees on the ridge above it for President and Mrs. Coolidge in 1929 were held in

this grove. It lies south of the western end of Governors walk, shortly before it reaches the junction with Sassafras Road.

Pershing Grove. This is the square plantation of pines north of Hilltop Drive, the northwest corner of which just touches Memory Road where it turns west after coming out of the first spruce thicket. So called because General Pershing, during one of his vacations on Naushon, cleared away this grove by taking out the smaller trees with his axe. He cut away about 50 trees, probably about the year 1921.

Eagle Hollow, the hollow just west of the Eagle Hollow Path and north of the Commodore Path, freely grown up to brush with a few very fine trees in it. Its name dated at least to the days of Governor Swain.

Ram Cat Alley, lies off the Main Road west of the Beech Orchard, and until the road was cut through the center of it was a wild jumble of rocks, one of the most picturesque spots on the Island. Some deluded members of the family speak of it as Witches Glen. Sarah Swain Forbes preferred the name Witches Glen disliking the name Ram Cat Alley . . . and on one occasion was invited to drive, and on driving down found a sign on one of the trees, "Ram Cat Alley, Beware of the Ram Cat", and driving on directly into the Alley . . . our Cousin, Frank S. Watson appeared dressed in a tigers skin, his red beard militantly protruding forward. He leapt from boulder to boulder, uttering ear piercing yells and howls.

Johnnys Saloon, deep valley in thick woods south of the Main Road just east of western end of Governors Walk. One looks down into an extremely deep valley down a steep hillside. This was the scene of a picnic in the early days . . . and the little horse Johnny Crapeau brought one of the party there, and for this the valley was named for him, Johnnys Saloon.

Grinnell Swamp, swamp in the Grinnell Woods just north of the east end of Tarpaulin Cove. The ruin on the point below the old fortifications built in Revolutionary days, is of an old farm house occupied by Grinnell, and the wood and swamp were named for him.

Pine Garden, name given to the planted section of pines just north of the Plantagenet Wall and bounded by the Bowdoin Wall on the south and traversed by Plantagenet Path and Happy Valley Road.

Rye Field, the opening just southwest of Peaked Rock Hill. That part of it that the South Rye Field Road enters on emerging from the woods used to be a fenced area which was planted with rye, for the purpose of getting either improved feed for the sheep or the game birds.

Peaked Rock Hill, hill in the same clearing as the Rye Field, north of Governors Walk, designated by a very sharp pointed rock.

The Jim Field, large open field traversed by Bathing Beach Road. For several years this was fenced and farmed with the idea of getting potatoes, beets etc. for the family and green feed and oats for the stock. It is not known how the name came to be given it, but it must go back more than a century. (N. B. A. F. E. suggests that as this is near Jobs Neck the two names were given for the two Indians, Job and James Antiko who may have occupied the wigwam shown on an early map on Lackeys Bay just east of present Calf Pasture House.)

Calf Pasture Meadow, field bounded on all sides by stone walls through which road goes to house of J. S. Russell.

Pony Pasture, the pasture bounded on east, north and west by stone walls and on the south by Lackeys Bay. It is the site of the Pony Pasture house of Mrs H. S. Russell with stable, tennis court and two circular walled garden enclosures. Not far from the tennis court is a rock with the initials D W carved upon it, because Daniel Webster stood there when he attended the deer hunt on one of his visits. It is the theatre of many deer drives, the first drive of each hunt is always known as the house drive, the gunners being placed, since the construction of the house, along the west side of the pasture.

Elfin Glen, lies immediately northeast of Strawberry Hill and runs in a generally north and south direction. It is not known how it got its name, but is a deep hollow, one of the most beautiful on the Island.

Strawberry Hill, the open hill about $\frac{1}{4}$ mile north of Main Road and circled on its southerly side by Cary Path.

Deer Hill (East End), the hill on right of Main Road, directly across from the north end of Glen Elvo Path. It is bounded on the west by Deer Parlor.

Trotting Course (laid out by Henry H. Crapo in 1833, A. F. E.) circular half mile course, fairly level, lying east of the Green Gate Wall which its western extremity touches at Trotting Course Gate. Beyond this gate is the W. W. Swain Tree and the beginning of Governors Walk.

Deer Hill (West End) is to be reached by the Deer Hill Road. The highest part is entirely clear of trees but the edge of the north and east side is heavily forested. Hesper Path also opens onto the hill which is northwest of Hollow Farm.

Sarah Forbes Fishing Rock. "On the 25th August, 1864, a bridge or water fence was made to the rock on the north shore at the end of the Green Gate Wall, formerly I believe called the Fishing Rock and now named Sarah's Rock, it having been fitted for little Sarah's benefit, she being now twelve years old and fond of fishing.

On that day we first threw a line there after many years intermission and J. M. F. and Sarah caught 1 tautog, weight $4\frac{1}{2}$ lb. and 2 others believed 2 and 3 lb. and several small ones.

Fishing continued to September 9th with tolerable success.

(J. M. F. in the Mansion House Book).

GOATS NECK

Hadley Inner Harbor is bounded on the west and northwest by Naushon, on the north by Bulls Neck, on the east by Nonamesset at Newkit Point and on the south by Goats Neck. The eastern end of Goats Neck is opposite the Newkit and its western end is connected with Naushon by the causeway at the southwest end of the Harbor, opposite the Upper Wharf.

1858 Goats Neck was uninhabited until in 1858 J. M. F., "Gave Moses Bliss \$50. to build a small shanty on one of the points in Hadley Harbor. On August 15th hired the above building to Capt. Samuel Smith upon condition that he pay \$10. a season for the privilege of occupying it while fishing about here. . . ."

1877 Capt. Smith still paying \$10. rent.

1881 "Rebuilt and added to Capt. Smith's shanty for Captain Warren Cammett." He probably lived there until he left in 1886.

1887 William Sawtelle who came as coachman in the employ of J. M. F. in 1879 moved into the Captains cottage and spent the summers there from 1887-1898.

1892 "The new Wild Duck Road was built leading down to the Wild Duck Wharf. . . . This summer we have built a small wharf (in place of former one) for the convenience of the *Wild Duck* whose moorings are off that point."

1893 "We have . . . raised the cottage, taken it out of the damp ground where its sills were rotting and its inmates threatened with rheumatism and put it $2\frac{1}{2}$ ft. higher & added wing which increases its comfort without making it conspicuous."

1898-1947 Capt. Charles O. Olsen made this his permanent home for 50 years. He and his wife were beloved by all on Naushon and by the many visitors who cruised into the harbor, year after year. Here he died on July 16th, 1947, at the age of 81, having retired from command of the Naushon launch five years earlier.

1899 After the Wild Duck was sold the wharf fell into disrepair, but became more and more used by picnic parties from the mainland.

1909 New wharf built by Mrs. Cary for use of picnic parties.

1930 Harbor cottage built for Ruth Forbes Paine (Young) on Goats Neck.

1932 Wild Duck wharf rebuilt for use of visitors.

1956 For about 25 years this wharf was used for picnicking by great numbers of people from the neighboring shores. In 1956 it became unsafe and it was decided, partly from its exposed position and partly from the fire hazard, to move the picnic area to Bulls Neck, and the wharf was entirely removed. (Bulls Neck is now frequently called Bulls Island.)

The Captain's cottage has, since Capt. Olsen's day, been occupied by:

1942-1945 Captain Bosworth of Cuttyhunk

1945-1947 Captain Richard Norton of Marthas Vineyard

1947-1952 Captain Norman West of Marthas Vineyard

1952-1954 Captain Lawrence B. Dahlmer of Gloucester

1954-1961 Captain Richard Alberts of Woods Hole

1961- Captain William C. Eaton

In recent years new wells, improvements and additions have been made for the convenience of the launch captains who have made the cottage their year round home.

BULLS NECK

1893 J.M.F. records, "We have nearly finished a canal about 8 ft. wide across Bulls Neck which is to have 1 ft., at least, of water at low tide and where there is a nice current flowing through now and freshening the water of our Inner Harbor. The Wild Duck coaling wharf and stone work have been done by Mr. Davis of Falmouth; the wood work by Mr. Burdick.

Another feature has been the building of a very successful windmill on Bulls Neck to supply the yacht with fresh water from the pond. This was admirably done by our good friend and relation, Edward A. Dana of Fairhaven, who may well be called "the king of storms" for by his ingenious contrivances he has harnessed Aeolus to do our work (his wife was aunt of Sarah Jones Forbes). The Dana windmill is a perfect success and rather an ornament than a blemish to our harbor, having its color much like the oaks and some ornamental rustic work.

We have built a coal pocket near the windmill, capable of holding about 225 tons of hard coal, shipped to us by our good cousin, Warren Delano Jr. in the schooner *White Cloud*."

1956 The need for a public landing place for picnic parties was for many years met by the Wild Duck wharf on Goats Neck. The rebuilding of that wharf appears undesirable; it opens to picnic parties an area where two houses are located with the attendant risk of fires spreading through the woods to the houses, it gives the public access to all of Naushon, the location is exposed to north winds and sea coming in through the Narrows. All of these objections could be met by locating a float off the old coal pocket wharf.

The Trustees have voted to designate this as Bulls Neck Wharf and visitors are welcome to land and picnic there.

1958 Naushon was the beneficiary of a legacy of \$15,000. left by the Will of Grace Dana of Fairhaven. It was a gift from herself and her sister Edith, cousins of the family who, with their half-sister Emma B. Hathaway, (who was a great niece of Sarah Swain Forbes) had lifetime association with Naushon.

The Dana sisters were daughters of Edward A. Dana who designed the windmill. A part of the legacy has been applied to the installation of a float and the repair of the wharf. It is intended that the use of this legacy will be related to the use of this Island by the public.

It is fitting that at Bulls Neck there should be a memorial to these friends and a plaque with the following inscription will be placed near the wharf;

In Affectionate Recognition of
The Generosity to
Naushon Island
of
Grace and Edith Dana
and
Emma B. Hathaway
of Fairhaven, Massachusetts
This Area has been Set Aside for
The Enjoyment of Visitors

Picnic Beaches; The following beaches may be used by the public; Tarpaulin Cove, Kettle Cove, West Beach and Weepecket Island Beach.

BURYING GROUNDS

There are upon Naushon, including Nonamesset, five groups of graves, and in addition to these three single graves in widely separated spots.

The largest, and only formal cemetery lies some 1000 yards northwest of the Tarpaulin Cove Lighthouse and contains a dozen or more graves. Most of these are marked only by rough field stones at head and foot, some

of which have initials crudely cut in the rock; there are also three marked with traditional engraved stones with the following inscriptions;

In memory of
Capt Eli Parmele
of Guilford
who died Jan^r 27th 1805
in the 33^d Year
of his age

In memory of
Captain William Loring
of Norwich
in Connecticut
He was born in Boston
January 5th 1756
and died at sea
Feb^y 2^d 1788

This small tribute of respect is to the memory of
Ithuel Hill
who having been a voyage
to Machias for the benefit
of his health died
on his passage to Sag Harbor
July 29, 1821
AE 58 respected and lamented

Loring, in all the prime of life
Hath quit this brittle clay
And calmly steered his single bark
To yonder world of Day

Stone in the Lighthouse Enclosure

Rest mortal dust
In the bosom of the earth
Rest happy spirit
In the bosom of thy Godd
I. C. Hill
Sag Harbor

In
Memory of Judith
Wife of Joseph Gane
who died
Sept. 10, 1841
AE 94 Yrs, 4 ms.

In an open glade south of the Governors Walk, reached by a straight path from the Ridge Road, lie buried "The Governor", William W. Swain and his wife Lydia Russell and their son Robert. Here also lies buried William H. Hathaway, the brother of Sarah Swain Forbes.

This spot, one of the most secluded and inspiring Island shrines, was devastated by the repeated hurricanes of the past 25 years, and all of the primeval beeches which formed a majestic aisle to these graves were laid low. A new path has been cut through the second growth which had almost hidden the graves, and a space around the little cemetery cleared.

There is a group of six or more graves southeast of Cary Path just east of its junction with the Main Road. Here, tradition tells us were buried members of the Gifford family.

Another burial ground lies just south of the south side of the Trotting Course, a little to the east of its central point.

On Nonamesset there is a hollow north of the westerly end of Lackeys Bay Road east of where it dips down sharply before it comes into the open.

Here there are six or more graves marked at head and foot by field stones, but with no lettering.

It is possible that members of the Robinson family who made Nonamesset their home for 68 years from 1767-1835 may have chosen this for their last resting place. It is recorded that six of the children of Isaac and Mary Robinson were buried at the Island, but whether this refers to Naushon or Nonamesset we do not know.

When the Mansion House was renovated there was found in the foundation a small engraved stone, the top broken off, with the inscription;

iah Nye
(daughter of)
Mr Elisha Nye and Mrs Lucy his wife
Who died April 7th. 1773
aged one year nine months and twelve days

The Childs Grave lies all by itself at the end of Childs Grave Path, just north of the Great Swamp. The initials crudely cut on the rough stone have been deciphered as S W but this is only surmise.

A D

The Timothy John grave is on the North Shore west of Silver Beach.

It is thought to be that of an unknown sailor. The name given it by J. M. F. was perhaps suggested by the lines which he preserved in his collection of poetry, "The Old Scrap Book";

"Sacred to the memory of Timothy John,
Who died in the year one thousand and one.
Stranger, pray for the soul of Timothy John,
Or let it alone, — 'tis all one to Timothy John
Who died in the year one thousand and one."

There may be many undiscovered graves in the woods or near the Cove. We are told that Cornelius Robinson who was born at the Farm in 1768 was buried at Tarpaulin, but his grave has not been identified. Those here mentioned are all which have been found and recorded.

Chapter II

TENANTS, FARM HOUSES, FARMS

OCCUPANTS OF NAUSHON, NONAMESSET AND UNCATENA

Indians of prehistoric times lived upon Naushon and the neighboring islands as is shown by the remains of shell heaps still to be found along the shores.

As the first white settlers, the English, gradually acquired the Indian lands the Indians were pushed into the less desirable areas. A few ancient papers give us a bare outline of what happened to the 40 Indian families who Thomas Mayhew describes as inhabiting Naushon in 1678.

LAWS

For the Indian Tenants to observe & Fullfill that live on Elizabeths I.

No Indians to Hunt or kill deer or doe Dammage on sd. Islands.

No Cedars or other Trees Reserved by Landlord to be cutt or Destroyd.

The Indians to Live Compact together as a village at the Place on the North Side of the Island the Landlord Appointed and Reserved for them in his lease with the English Tenants.

No swine to go unringed but to be kept in w'th Creatures they have in the Inclosure of the 100 acres Reserved for there use and planting.

All the Bayberry Wax can be gathered . . . is to be made & brought yearly as rent to the Landlord for there living there.

W't Ground they clear is to be planted but 3 years and then to be Layed downe to Grass.

The Ferry Canoe w'ch is kept at Nannemessett by Passasuit is never to be taken away by any other Indians w'thout Leave of the Ferryman, but the sd. Passasuit is Allways to keep a good Canoe their for the Landlord to use.

1. The Worship of God to be upheld & constantly attended by all the Indians.
2. The School to be kept up among them for the instruction of the children.
3. They are to Live Soberly, Virtuously, honestly and w'thout Offense.
4. The Indian Justice among them to punish them for their Faults and Misdemeanors.

1720 To all Xtian People to whom these presents shall come;
I Passasuit

Haveing heretofore Liv'd on Nonemessett as Mr Winthrop's Tenant above these 20 years doe now for my Self and the Rest of the Indian Inhabitants, Tenants on the great Island called Elezabeths, covenant, promise and agree with Mr John Winthrop, sone and heir of the aboves'd Gen. Winthrop to perform the articles etc. made by the aboves'd Winthrop to his son, Vis. We are to have the privilege of Improving 100 acres of Land on the North Side of Tarpolin Cove Island in such place as the Lessor shall direct and order and in the meantime the s'd Indians shall have suitable planting ground allowed them as formerly, we are to clear so many acres a man as we shall need for planting, and to use that new cleared land but 3 years, and then to Lay it downe to grass and clear more for planting till the 100 acres are all clear. And for consideration of s'd living there on s'd Island we promise and oblige ourselves and Heirs to bring all the Bayberry Wax is to be gott on s'd Island per the year to the Landlord as rent, and we . . . will not cut or suffer to be cutt downe, barke, peal or destroy any Cedars, Chestnutts or Wallnutts or other Trees that are Reserved by s'd Winthrop, or kill any deer . . . and wh't Swine or other Creatures we keep . . . we will keep them ringed and Yoked & within the Inclosure of the aboves'd 100 acres and not suffer them to root and spoil the Grass or doe dammage to the English Tenants and we further promise to live soberly, virtuously and honestly without offense, and to live compact together and constantly uphold the Worship of God, and a school among us, that we may deserve Mr Winthrop (the) present Landlord's favor and kindness to us as we formerly enjoyed his Father's.

In Witness hereof I afores'd Passasuit have at the request and consent and in behalf of all the Indians sett to my hand

This first day of March, 1720

At the time when Passasuit, in behalf of the Indians, made the above agreement with John Winthrop the tenant at the Naushon Farm was John Weekes and at the Cove, was Joseph Ffuller.

The following letter from Joseph Ffuller to John Winthrop is purely phonetic and almost illegible, but shows that all was not plain sailing for either the English or the Indian tenants;

1723 "Sor,

thes indians one (own) no landlord but the s'd Weeks; except the s'd Parseuit and Thomas Samson and Joseph Skunbing they own, but pay little.

Most honoured Landlord I understand they gathered a great sum among the natives, but they have told a lie. For I came home and I hear they have sold (told?) this same Gifford — same that liveth in the Grait House at the Est End of the Island. I have spoke hard to them hoping they would do good

to themselves but they neglect and, Sor, they differ and don't own Parssuit to rule over them. The Indians tell me they have no occasion to pay your Honor. . . .

They say the Weekes say it is their land, and in great measure it has hindered them from paying their rent. And there is som gon off, and they will all go off before they will be under Passuit.

Skwashight he owes and is come in. . . . Great Jonathan he owes none, but the great Men that live on the finest of floure and lives in Grait Houses over at Falmouth, they twit me in livin in a *horse Stabil*.

Sor, there is nothing can be done consarning the dets that is due without your Honour be ples to sende a letter [of attorney] to sue these natefs . . . and so fines on them."

These Indian names appear in the various Deeds and letters and papers:

In the earliest Deed from the Indians to Thomas Mayhew appear the names of Seayk Sachem and Quaquaquinnegat Sachem, and in the above letter Joseph Ffuller mentions Parsseuit, Thomas Samson, Skwashight and Great Jonathon and Joseph Skunbing.

In other records the following are mentioned:

| | | |
|-------------|------------------------|----------------|
| Comucke | Pehtauattooh . | Joshua Chamuck |
| Webacowett | Undequit | Asa |
| Pamchamnuit | Jannohquissoo | Thomas Antiko |
| Washamwatt | Abigail Seckitchakomun | James Antiko |
| | | Job Antiko |

It seems possible that the "Jim Field" and "Job's Neck" were named after the Indians, James and Job Antiko.

BAYBERRY WAX

The wax which coats the bayberry seeds and gives them their gray-blue color was used for candles in early Colonial times. These gave not only light but a pleasant fragrance when burning.

The above letters show that bayberry wax was valued by John Winthrop and was the only rent the Indian tenants were required to pay.

Wait Winthrop wrote to his brother Fitz-John (who was in command of the expedition against Canada in 1690 and was Governor of Connecticut from 1698-1707):

1695

Boston Oct'r. 28, 1695

"Being but newly come home from Tarpolin Cove, and finding the ships just going, I shall send by them a cake of the Bayberry wax, about 25 lb., which is som I had by me since last year, and is all I can procure, it being

but now the time to gather it, and none yet come in. I know not whether there may be any mixture in it which is not so well deserved by the colour (which is preserved or heightened by melting in a brass vessell and lost in iron) as by the snuffe of the candles which gives a delicate perfume of itself but stinks if adulterated.

I have laid out for som very good from the Island and may send (it) if any opportunity (offers) after this.

1710 Joseph Ffuller to Wait Winthrop Tarpolin Cove Apr. 25

"I will send all the baywax I have been getting this year, there's about 60 lb. of it."

1714 Thomas Lechmere to John Winthrop

Dear Brother, I am now to beg one favour of you, that you secure for me all the bayberry wax you can possibly lay your hands on; what charge you shall be at in securing it shall be thankfully repaid to you or your order upon receipt of (it). You must take care they do not putt too much tallow among it, being a custom and cheat they have gott.

Pray answer if (you can) procure any wax or not; they tell (me the best) place is off your islands."

1715 Wait Winthrop to his son John

Oct. 3, 1715 "Fuller is here now, he brought about 10 lb. of green wax, and thats all."

John Winthrop in his diary tells of one of the uses of bayberry, "Ye inner bark of ye tallest beberry bush steeped in water, ye Indians on Elizabeth Island cure ye Bloody Flux with. Quere — whether if steeped in wine it would not be better?"

From Ancient Catalogue of Objects of Natural History
by

John Winthrop, F. R. S.

No. 50 Myrtle berries, of which are made candles and soap. (Myrica).

TENANTS ON NAUSHON

Having told what little is known of the Indian tenants we now turn to the story of the tenant farmers.

1684 The first, of whom there is a record, is Anthony Blaney. He

lived at Tarpaulin Cove and evidently Blaneys Pond, east of which Blaneys wigwam is shown on an early map, was named for him.

1694-1724 John Weekes leased the East End of Naushon from Wait Winthrop and lived there for some 30 years. His brother, William, also lived at the farm and at Nonamesset at times.

"... I doe acknowledge myselfe to be tenant at the East End of Elizabeth Island, called by the Indians Nashana, unto Wait Winthrop of Boston, and do promise to keep possession for him there and also at Nonameset as long as he and I shall gree . . . and to deliver quiet possession to said Winthrop when demanded, and in the mean time I do engage to look after and provide for the stock and till what land I can for which I am to have $\frac{1}{3}$ part of the increase of the neat cattle, sheep and goates after the stock is made good, and $\frac{1}{2}$ of all production out of the ground and also of the produce of the dayry, . . . in Succonesset this 20th of March 1694/5.

William Weekes
Samuel Shvirick

John Weekes

New London, Dec. 8, 1724

Received 140 lb. in bills as Rent of Capt. Joseph Robinson and Mr William Weekes for Nashana & Nanemasset Islands they hired of me the year 1724.
J. W.

1699 Caleb Ray and Joseph Fuller leased the Cove Farm and all of the west end of the Island except 100 acres (reserved for the Indians).

1699-1704 Caleb Ray was at the Cove.

1707-1729 Joseph Fuller at the Cove and his son, Thomas, also there.

1707 Memorandum — It is agreed by Wait Winthrop of Boston and Joseph Fuller now resident at Tarpaulin Cove . . . that said Fuller shall fit up the old house at the Cove and make it tenantable and tite, and help to pull down and remove the house he now resides in, to be set where said Winthrop shall order, and s'd Fuller to live in the old house when fitted and have all the neck of land on which it stands as it is now fenced, together with what stock of neat cattle, goats and sheep mentioned in the schedule hereunto annexed with all the profit of the same from . . . the date hereof to the 1st day of May next which will be in the year 1708, and then to deliver the said neck of land with the housing and fences in good and tenantable repair, together with all the said stock etc. . . . and it is to be further understood that the sheep are to be returned without their fleeces, that is to say Fuller is to have the woole but he is not to shear them till the usual time when the wether is seasonable, and what lambs and kids shall be fallen belong to the

said Winthrop . . . to whom said Fuller is to deliver all the premises as above. this 14th day of May 1707 on Elizabeth Island.

Witness John Weekes

Wait Winthrop

Matthew Ronebee

Joseph Ffuller

Schedule; 6 cows, 2 oxen seven years old, 2 steers, 1 bull, 3 yearlings, 6 calves, 50 sheep, 70 goats — all the above stock received by me — Joseph Ffuller

1708-1719 As above shown, Wait Winthrop and later, his son, John, made provision for the Indians to have a Reservation of 100 acres, their rent to be all the bayberry wax gathered each year.

1724 William Weekes & Capt Joseph Robinson were at the Farm and Nonamesset.

THE ROBINSON FAMILY

Naushon was the home of members of the Robinson family for more than one hundred years.

The three chief sources of information concerning them come from Seth Robinson whose account was recorded in Farm Records in 1848; from the recollections of Samuel Robinson, written when he was an old man (1841) and from Banks, "History of Marthas Vineyard" Vol. 111, from which some of the dates are taken.

There are conflicting statements, doubtless due to the fact that the vital statistics of the residents of Naushon were not always officially recorded, and also inter-family marriages and duplication of names add to the confusion.

Probably the most authentic account is that of Seth Robinson:

1703-1790 Thomas Robinson lived and died on the Island. He occupied the house that stood S.E. of the Farm House, not now extant.

1729-1805 Zepheniah, his son, left the Island in 1804. His sons were:

1757-1841 Shadarack, born in farmhouse, lived there & at West End till 1808.

1760-1806 Thomas, born in farmhouse, lived there & at Hollow Farm all his life.

1766-1827 Zepheniah, born in farmhouse, lived there & at Hollow Farm until 24 years old.

James, born in farmhouse, lived there & at Hollow Farm until 28 years old.

1768 *Cornelius, born in farmhouse, lived all his life at the Island. Buried at Cove.

1773-1844 Stephen, born in farmhouse, lived all his life at the Island except two years at Pasque.

1781 Seth, born in farmhouse, first tenant at Uncatena, there till 1832.

Alexander, born in farmhouse, lived there till 21 years old.

Paul, born in farmhouse, lived there till 21 years old.

West, born in farmhouse, lived there till 17 years old.

* Two sons of Cornelius now (1848) living in Woods Hole, vis. Irvin and Cornelius.

1714-1790 Isaac Robinson of Chilmark came to Naushon in 1767. He may have been a son of Peter, of Marthas Vineyard. He married Mary, sister of the first Zepheniah and for 23 years they lived at the Farm. Six of their young children were buried at the Island.

According to Samuel, his grandfather was William and lived at Hollow Farm, and his father was Paul who first occupied the Nonamesset House.

Stephen Robinson who lived probably at the Cottage Lot and at the West End is the last member of the family upon Naushon of whom we have record. He moved to West Island (off Fairhaven) in 1842 and died there two years later.

William A. Robinson who came to Tarpaulin Cove in 1898 came from the South and was apparently no relation.

OCCUPANCY OF FARMS

1684-1950

The Farm

| | | | |
|-----------|--------------------|-----------|-------------------|
| 1694 | John Weekes | 1864-1873 | A. C. White & |
| 1724 | William Weekes | | John W. Gifford |
| -1790 | Thomas Robinson | 1873-1874 | W. Ansel Bates |
| 1729-1804 | Zepheniah Robinson | 1874-1878 | James Sutherland |
| 1767-1790 | Isaac Robinson | 1878-1895 | James Cameron |
| 1802-1810 | Baalis Bullard | 1895-1897 | D. C. Look |
| 1810-1815 | Barnabas Chadwick | 1898-1899 | F. H. Lambert |
| 1810-1815 | Louis Calot | 1899-1904 | Nahum Nickerson |
| 1815-1828 | Walter Woodard | 1904-1908 | W. H. Morrisson |
| 1828-1841 | Pardon Gifford | 1908-1912 | Norman A. MacLeod |
| 1841-1843 | Leonard Gifford | 1912-1913 | E. Van Steenburg |
| 1843-1844 | Thomas Trasker | 1913-1914 | Wm. B. Hunter |
| 1844-1864 | Otis Lake | 1914-1917 | S. W. Huckins |

| | | | |
|-----------|-------------------|-----------|-----------------|
| 1918-1922 | Wm. Chambers | 1969-1970 | Robert Wright |
| 1922-1925 | T. E. Tawell | 1970-1975 | Walter Bzibziak |
| 1925-1928 | C. E. Henrickson | 1976-1978 | Leon Gibson |
| 1928-1950 | William A. Allen | 1978- | Donald Gregson |
| 1950-1969 | Leonard McCaffrey | | |

Nonamesset

| | | | |
|-----------|---------------------------------------|-----------|-----------------|
| 1724 | Joseph Robinson | 1854-1855 | Moses Adams |
| 1740-1817 | Paul Robinson moved to N. in 1769. | 1855-1857 | Benjamin Smith |
| | | 1865 | Abraham Briggs |
| 1769-1806 | Samuel Robinson | 1867-1877 | Oliver Grinnell |
| -1835 | Polly Robinson | 1870-1873 | Benjamin Besse |
| -1835 | Tillinghast Gifford | | Captain Hansen |
| 1846-1847 | Benjamin Palmer | | Captain Norton |
| 1847-1849 | Ephraim Lake | | Captain McCrae |
| 1850-1854 | Joseph Crapo | | |

Tarpaulin Cove

| | | | |
|-----------|---------------------|-----------|--|
| 1684-1699 | Anthony Blaney | 1873-1874 | Abraham C. White |
| 1699-1704 | Caleb Ray (b. 1654) | 1874-1886 | David S. Beetle |
| 1707-1729 | Joseph Ffuller | 1886-1891 | Ensign E. Howes |
| | Thomas Fuller | 1893-1898 | George Merithew |
| 1729-1755 | none listed | 1898-1910 | William A. Robinson |
| 1755-1766 | Robert Hatch | 1910-1915 | Lawrence Creamer |
| 1756-1757 | Roger Merihew | 1915-1916 | John Olsen |
| 1760 | John Shreve | 1916-1917 | John Donald |
| 1773-1778 | Elisha Nye | 1917-1938 | Clarence King |
| 1773 | Barnabas Hinkley | 1939-1944 | Lovell P. George |
| 1776-1800 | Elnathan Rowley | 1944-1945 | Amelia Forbes leased the Cove and it was no longer occupied after 1945 until Anne Forbes took it for summer occupancy. |
| 1778-1809 | John Nye | | |
| 1810 | Shadarack Robinson | | |
| 1833-1837 | Asa Johnson | | |
| 1837-1842 | Wm. R. Slocum | | |
| 1842-1872 | John W. Gifford | | |

Light Keepers at Tarpaulin Cove

| | | | |
|-----------|---|------|----------------------|
| 1759-1764 | Zaccheus Lumbert | 1852 | Joseph R. Luce |
| 1764-1817 | The Cove Tavern Keepers probably also kept the Light. | 1853 | Nathan Clifford, Jr. |
| | | 1861 | Abraham C. White |
| | | 1864 | Samuel E. Skiff |
| 1818 | John Geyer, 1st Appointee of Lighthouse Service. | 1869 | William E. Skiff |
| | | 1871 | Richard Norton |

| | | | |
|-----------|--------------------|-----------|----------------------------|
| 1882 | Calvin N. Adams | 1928-1941 | Tolman Spencer. He was |
| 1886 | Frank S. Carson | | the last Lightkeeper and |
| 1910 | George A. Howard | | left on Sept. 4, 1941 when |
| 1912-1916 | Frederick W. Field | | automatic light was in- |
| 1916-1920 | Carl Hill | | stalled, serviced from |
| 1920-1928 | Frank Davis | | Woods Hole. |

West End and Hollow Farm

| | | | |
|----------|-----------------------------------|-----------|---|
| 1740 (?) | William Robinson (Hollow Farm) | 1833-1842 | Stephen Robinson West End |
| | William Butler (Hollow Farm) | | Beriah Austin, West End & (Hollow Farm) |
| 1806 | David Tilton, West End | | Oliver Grinnell |
| | | 1834-1836 | George Weeks (Hollow Farm) |

West End

| | | | |
|-----------|-------------------|-----------|-----------------|
| 1846 | Nathaniel Wilcox, | 1886-1891 | Angus McPhee |
| 1855-1857 | Moses Adams | 1891-1894 | Ensign E. Howes |
| 1857-1865 | Joseph R. Luce | 1892-1893 | George Maury |
| 1865-1875 | Reuben Dyer | 1893-1895 | George Merithew |
| 1876-1880 | Wm. H. Brightman | 1895-1898 | Clinton Davis |
| 1880 | Willard Besse | 1898-1904 | Frank Peterson |
| 1883 | Mr Pope | 1905-1915 | Allen H. Reed |
| -1886 | Henry Mosher | 1916-1938 | John Olsen |

Uncatena

| | | | |
|-----------|-----------------|-----------|------------------|
| 1805-1832 | Seth Robinson | 1848-1850 | Elisha Woodworth |
| 1833-1842 | Ellery Brownell | 1850-1851 | Horace Wilcox |
| 1842-1845 | Thomas Trasker | 1851-1852 | Franklin Thacher |
| 1845-1846 | Peleg Pierce | 1852- | Lemuel Besse |
| 1846-1847 | Alhira Lewis | | |

FARM HOUSES

Built before 1657 or 1682:

First house said to have been built by Thomas Mayhew. If this refers to Thomas Mayhew, Jr. who, together with his father, bought the islands from the Indians, and who died in 1657, it would have been one of the very early houses in the coast. The facts are not known.

Probably built before 1682, 1st Tarpaulin Cove House, definitely mentioned in 1696.

- 1702 2nd Farm House built for Wait Winthrop.
- 1707 The Hermitage, log house built on easterly side of Tarpaulin Cove. West End House probably built early in the 18th century. Hollow Farm House probably built in early or middle 18th century.
- 1759 Lighthouse built at the Cove by Zaccheus Lumbert of Nantucket.
- 1760 3rd Farm House built for William and James Bowdoin. Zephaniah Robinson was the first tenant.
- 1765 Nonamesset House was built this year according to Seth Robinson. Other accounts mention the dates 1760 and 1769. Between 1760 and 1770 house on the east side of Tarpaulin Cove built by Zaccheus Lumbert.
- 1775 Revolutionary Barracks built at Cove to accommodate 75 or 80 men.
- 1784 Tarpaulin Cove House built near site of former house.
- 1809 Uncatena House built. Seth Robinson was the first tenant.
- 1818 U. S. Government Lighthouse replaced first Lighthouse at the Cove.
- 1824 It is possible that a 4th Farm House was built by Salem Town.
- 1824 Cottages at Cottage Lot built for woodcutters by Salem Town.
- 1850 Hollow Farm House was moved from Hollow Farm to "Fox Valley" between the Cove House and the Lighthouse. In 1877 it was again "flaked" and moved to Woods Hole. It is said to be still standing.
- 1854 Bowling Alley built at Cove just north of the house.
- 1859 "Shanty" on Goats Neck built for Capt. Smith. It was enlarged in 1881, and has been rebuilt. Probably nothing now remains of original house.
- 1884 At West End new house and barn were built to replace old house.
- 1887 Dwelling house for Lightkeeper built just west of Lighthouse.
- 1891 New brick tower built on foundations of the old Lighthouse.
- 1893 Farm House built for J. M. Forbes on site of former Farm House, the builder, Charles Burdick.
- 1921 Shepherd's Cottage built beside Farm House.

1942/43 Army Barracks built at Mt Surat and on Billiard Table Road. The two houses were bought in 1946 by W. Cameron Forbes and moved to their present sites, transformed into the White Cap and Lichen cottages.

N. B. At Nonamesset, at Uncatena and elsewhere small portable, temporary houses intended for employees have come, and gone, and are not here described.

THE NAUSHON FARM

1st House According to Seth Robinson, "the first house was built built before 1657 by Thomas Mayhew northeasterly from the horse barn or 1682 for meadow near the water, and not far from a fresh spring Thomas Mayhew now there just above high tide mark. There is still to be seen some remains of the brick used in building the chimney. It is supposed Thomas Mayhew built this for a temporary residence soon after he bought the Island from the Indians." Robinson does not say whether he refers to Thomas Mayhew or his son, both of whom bought Naushon from the Indians.

Thomas Mayhew Jr was especially interested in teaching and converting the Indians and if the house were his it was built before 1657, in which year he died. If, however, it was built for his father it might have been standing at any time before his death in 1682.

2nd House It was during the occupancy of John and William Weeks built in 1702 for that the 2nd farm or Dairy House was built, as noted by Wait Winthrop's son, John, who says it was built in 1702.

In 1708 in the lease of the house to Weeks it is stipulated that, "The said Wait Winthrop shall have at all times the free use, improvement and disposal of one room in the Great House". This is undoubtedly the "Grait House" mentioned in Ffuller's letter of 1723.

3d House The farm House built in about 1750 was first occupied built about by Zepheniah Robinson. Here his ten sons were born and 1750/60 for from 1767 to 1790 his nephew Isaac Robinson made it Wm. and James his home. Samuel Robinson came to this house in 1800 Bowdoin and left in 1806. Baalis Bullard followed him and Barnabas Chadwick was living here at the time of the death of James Bowdoin.

4th House
?
1824

On May 30th, 1824, Salem Town, then in charge of wood-cutting at the West End, wrote his wife, "I have got up a house 18 ft. x 50 ft. & a kitchen 16 ft. x 24 ft. and shall if prepared have it ready to move in by the 7th, but . . . Mrs Town had better not start untill Tuesday the 8th." This sounds as if he had built a new Farm House but we have only the evidence of this letter.

5th House
built in 1893
for J. M. Forbes

It was during the tenure of James Cameron (1878-1895) that the present Farm House was built. J. M. F. wrote, "Mr Bigelow came over to look at the old farm house which is considered past repairing or remodelling, and to make plans for a new one.

The Farm House which was to have been done by the carpenter, Burdick, about the first of July was only completed on or about the first of October, 1893."

NAUSHON FARM

1819 A picture of life at the farm between the times of James Bowdoin and William W. Swain is given by the following letters.

James Temple Bowdoin, after the death of his uncle appointed Gen. Salem Town of Charlton, Massachusetts as his agent in charge of the Naushon property. Town employed Walter Woodard of Charlton to manage the farm and to oversee the lumbering operations at the West End.

These letters were given to me in about 1950 by a descendant of Salem Town, Miss Nancy Newell.

Naushon Island
Aug. 19th, 1819

General Salem Town Jr.
Sir

I have sent you a letter that was date in June about the wait and number of bags . . . the number was 37 bags and I ha'nt received any other letter till now one dated July 16th and the wool I sent to Boston by Mr Winthrop's orders, and I wrote you about the beef whether I might sell it or not, and I don't read anything in your letter whether I might sell it or not, but the wethers I sold I had the money for them all but \$22. and that he is to pay when he come after more and then he wants a beef creater but I shant dast to sell one without I have orders from hed quarters, and I want to know whether you are coming down here or not this fall, and if you arn't coming at all I want to know it, but I must inform you that it has binn very dry time

indeed with us so that the corn and all other things was about giving out to nothing. But there was a little shower . . . and then we had a great plenty of rain, and I must inform you that we are all as well as we was when I wrote before and I hope we shall remain so.

Wlter Woodard

And I wrote in the last letter that I wanted 3 pigs, 2 sows and 1 bore, beecors these hogs are verry poor . . . indeed one old sow dide and one of the others can't hardly git up alone and has been so about a week and don't git no better . . . and William Robinson hant turned his oxen in and I don't know whether he will or not,

Walter Woodard

Nancy Woodard to Sally Town

August 19th, 1819

Dear Frend

I set down with pleasure to inform you that wee all are well. I want to see you very much and all of the folks at Charlton. I must tel you a little about my work. I found that I could not do without more help. I have hired Louisa Robinson a girl about 18 years old for 6 and 6 per week. She has worked here foure weeks and I like her much. Wee have enough to do. I have not had time to be homesick or lonsom or histeriky. I have not been from home but one afternoon sence I lived here. I have made all the chees and take care of them in the buttery myself and they look very hansom now as I tell the story.

Every one that have seen my chees ses they have never seen so hansom cheeses in this buttery and that encorages me some.

You cannot think how I want to see you and your children and in particular your babe. Do kiss your sweet babe once for me. I live in hopes to see you here this faul with the General. Don't be discouraged about coming, I think it will be for your health to come to the island.

If you will come we will have a deer killed if they can find one, if not our chickens will do to broil and wee have got water mellons big as pumpkins.

Now Mrs Town, don't you think you shall come. You said you would if you dare to. I wish you would write me soon, and will you be so kind as to enquire after my friends, especially my poor father and my dear little Calista Ann. Oh, that child is dear to me, here I must stop my hand trembels so. Sometimes I dream I see her pleasant countenance all reddy to embrace me. At other times I fancy I see her sick, without care or the comforts of life. This I keep out of my mind all I can and commit her to the care of Him who Made her.

Please give my compliments to your mother and Mrs Wheelock and Mrs Williams and Susan and Aunt Richard and tel her that i have got 54 cheeses

and I want to know how many she has got now. I must go to bed i am so sleepy, it is twelve o'clock now, good night.

I have got my chees set in good season this morning, I can write a little more. I have had several visits for the Ladies on the island and som from the main land and I like them very well. The people appear to set a greate deal by one another here and are very kind to mee. We have sailing parties here. Sometimes from a distance they bring their provisions and pay for the trouble more than we ask, for they say they never found (such) good natured folks on this farm before. They behave very civil. I get acquainted with a great many of them. You would laugh to hear them ask questions and see them around the chees tub. Abbigail sends her love to all the folks. Addison sends his love to William and all the children. Give my compliments to the General. I have not forgot him. I see his hat every day. . . . I can't write only in the night now. If this homely letter does not scare you i shall write again soon, when I get time. Do write to me soon and write if you think Mr Whipple will come here this faul. I think if I could here him preach now I should not forgit it so quick.

I am your friend

Nancy Woodard

N. B. Give my love to Mrs Stedman and write to me who does her washing.

Naushon Island, Apr. 12, 1821

Gen'l Town Jr. Sir,

The Grinnells have moved out and Tom have move in and there is no sails* for nair one of the salt mills and I expected you to send some and if you don't I must buy some here. I am -going to sell Seth Robinson a cow, and if it wont do you must write to me soon, and I want to know if the wood is going to be cut.

Mr Withington wants you should get him half bushel of fould meded seed . . . if the wood is not going to be cut, and if the wood is cut he don't want the seed. And now will inform you I have had 27 pigs and han'y sold but one and that I sold for \$2 . . . and Moses McKinstry has come back here and he wants \$12. a month and I told him I would give him \$11. for seven months. He did not say if he would work for that, or not, but I set him to work because I was alone and couldn't get along without somebody.

(later) There is nothing new to say as I know of except Mr Withington is madded because if the wood is cut he will have to move, and Polly Robinson is as mad as she can be because Tom goin to move in there. She come up and

* The reference to sails for the salt mills shows that at that time there were at Nona-messet and Uncatena windmills with the large sails of that period. They must have been conspicuous landmarks to those entering or leaving the Outer Harbor.

talk to my wife a grait deal but did not say anything to me, and it was lucky on her side she didn't. I shall begin to drive (the sheep) the 1st day of June. The cheese I shall send to Boston the first chance. We are all well.

Walter Woodard

Gen'l. Town

Naushon Island Dec., 1822

Sir

I will inform you that I must keep the notes I have got for the beef . . . and when I git the money I will send it to the Esquire.

Here is the bill of the stock to winter

| | | | |
|-----------------------|----|------------|----|
| The number of cows is | 28 | ox kind | 6 |
| 2 year olds | 8 | horse kind | 13 |
| calf | 15 | | |

Seth Robinson and Tomas Glen (Green) has 1 cow.

Mrs Woodard and child got home safe and well the first day of December. On Sunday we had a severe show of thunder and lightning and lightning struck Capt. Jabez Davis' barn and set it afire, burnt up hay and everything there in the barn.

Walter Woodard

Gen'l. Town

Naushon Island July 12th, 1823

Sir

I will give you the True count about the stock on the Island. The fat cattle is 30 head and the cows is 26 head and the calf are 19 head and the horse kind is 16 head and the oxen is 8 head and the 2 year olds is 9 head and the yearlings is 16 head, there is all the stock I have the cair of.

I have sent the wool to Boston a week ago. There is the best feed now that has been sence I lived here. I han't begun to hay any yet, but I am a-going to begin next week. We had it wet and cold in June. The oxen have come across the Bay and look very well. I think we are all well. I think our baby gets better fast. I have put her into the salt water a number of times and a-gone to more. I want to hear of you and your farther very much. Are the rest of your family all good.

Walter Woodard

Gen'l. Town

Naushon Island Sept. 1823

Sir

I think the beef this year must be drove to Briton (Brighton) for there is no boocher that is able to pay for it as i no of and i don't think it is best to

trust out the beef to the boocher that bot the weathers. He agreed to take the holl, took away 25 of them and said he wd. come back soon and git some more but i han't seen him sence. I han't got all the money for the last year beef yet, and I don't know when I shall git the rest. I have got some of it sence you was on the island but I had to pay it away for lumber to do the salt works on onnemessett for the works had got so out of repair that they could not make no sault. So i had to by som lumber to do them and i han't paid for it all yet, nor can't till i git som mony.

If the beef go to Briton i think it orto start from here by the 20 of October, the beef will be as good then as it will be this year.

Naushon Island Oct. 10th, 1823

Sir

You wrote to me about the stores we shall want; 1 jug Molasses, half a barrel of sugar and 2 lb of tea and 12 caiks of chocolate. I want you to fetch me 2 pair of the best and largest mittens, leather, and you shall have your money for them. I heard you sold the black lambs to J. Cowan, that goes against my will for he is a mean man and I do not like him. Wee are well and harty. I remain your friend

Walter Woodard

Salem Town Jr. to his Wife

Naushon Island, May 30, 1824

My Dear

I received your letter and perceived you have not received mine I never wrote for want of time only when an opportunity offers to send off & then in a hurry. Boat is now waiting.

I have got up a house 18 ft. x 50 ft. & a kitchen 16 ft. x 24 ft. and shall if prepared have it ready to move in by the 7th, but as they will be shearing Mrs Town had better not start until Tuesday the 8th of June so as to be in New Bedford Wednesday night, and if well she and our daughter will be met there by anxious friends. Get (?) with covered waggon & make easy seats with beds if you have them. You may put in the spring seat to waggon & cushioning (Cushions?) to my old water chaise. If it does not rain Tuesday morning of next week, I shall expect them Wednesday, if it does, then next day. Thomas will come with them if Augustus does not come. I think best if you have a maid come for a few months. They must bring hay for the horses and grain in bag for bait.

Come prudently, send to Simpson for some money and tell Thomas to pay $\frac{1}{2}$ what he agreed to, without fail. I should like a jug of paint, yellow, or any other color for tables, etc.

Drive steady, start early & may get to New Bedford by 2 o'clock.

Mr Eddy will go back with them on Saturday. Borden meant to go on board the first Providence vessel, but we can't tell when that will be, he hopes tomorrow.

Grosvenor Must look well to the right and left, salt the cattle, dip the sheep etc.

In haste Salem Town Jr.

N. Island June 5, 1824

My Dear

I have not heard from you since I left C. nor you from me. My apology is want of time, wharf, wharf, wharf, has been constantly in my head. I am not crazy but nearly so. A severe blow has just undone 20 days work at the wharf, which will make business brisk for a few days. What was I to do about a man, or who takes care of my father, are you coming to Boston the 15th at night & how shall you come, do you want money for expenses, are you and all friends well? Do answer all the above enquiries in 2 letters, one send to Falmouth, and the other give to a passenger in the Stage the 8th, Wednesday morning to be left at Wild & Hosmers. I expect to be there the 8th at 5 P.M. & leave for Falmouth at 3 A.M. the 9th, special business. Pray write and come to Boston at all events and send my blue suit down, whether you come, or not, & my black pantaloons & a good shirt and handkerchiefs.

Don't fail, in great haste, Heaven bless you and ours and keep you for

Salem Town Jr.

Do write, do write, all confusion.

Naushon, Oct. 8th, 1824

My Dear

This letter is dated the day we arrived safe on this Isle of the Sea, and it also bears the date the last day which an indulgent Providence spares my life, health and senses (unless going home to a sick wife, child or near friend) that I shall endeavor to do a weeks business in one day. I hope my family will be satisfied with my steady, faithful services for them, if my head ever gets settled and quiet and regular, I think it a duty I owe myself at least to use proper means to keep it so. There is a box of axes . . . we want them very much, G. will remember about the helves, he must send 1 doz. the first opportunity, and the whips.

Affectionately truly

Salem Town Jr.

Naushon, May 1st, 1825

All scripture is given by inspiration & is profitable, etc. was My Dear, the

text last evening of the first sermon preached by a Congregational Sitted Minister I ever heard on this Isle, and I think that ever was delivered.

I am well except confused. I am guilty of neglect in writing, my excuse is want of time. I expected to have seen you this day, but can't leave. I hope to be with you the 8th. General health prevails here & quiet & new comers are not unhappily disappointed, I think.

Heaven bless you and all friends and keep you safe for
Salem Town Jr.

P. S. 40 (men) waiting, 3 ways to go in one minute (after) they done breakfast.

It was in 1824 that Salem Town carried out the large project of wood cutting at the West End, which will explain his distraction of mind and the great number of men employed, and which is described in a later chapter.

From Columbian Centinel, August 6, 1828
Naushawn Island

"We visited the farm house where agriculture is carried on upon a large scale. Horses, cattle, sheep and butter and cheese shew almost prodigality of produce.

The Island is extremely well wooded, a great number of men being now employed cutting timber from it. About 30 horses are annually raised for market from the farm, and a vast number of sheep find rich pasture in its forests and upon its waste land."

1836 Extract from letter of W. W. Swain to James Temple Bowdoin

My Dear Sir,

I subjoin a list of stock on Naushaun in June of this year with such remarks as occur to me likely to be useful on your estate.

| | |
|----------------------------|----------------|
| 22 horses, mares and colts | 6 working oxen |
| 52 head of beef cattle | 1101 sheep |
| 17 cows, 11 calves | 154 lambs |

This part of the Island is capable of supporting, in ordinary seasons and in its present condition, somewhere about 2500 sheep, 80 to 100 head of cattle and cows and 20 or 30 horses. The summer pasturage is ordinarily abundant for a much larger number of both cattle and sheep and in good grass seasons sufficient fodder may be procured for more stock than is kept now. The soil of the Island being a light loam, in dry season the crop of grass is materially diminished, but with frequent rains the growth is very luxuriant and may be cut in the glades and open places of the forest and out on the pastures.

Tarpawling Cove farm is about 150 acres, keeps about 120 sheep, 2 pair oxen, 4 horses and as many cows.

West end 250 sheep, 1 horse, 3 cows and 1 or 2 pair oxen."

NONAMESSET

1654 Nonamesset, variously spelled, is mentioned in most of the deeds and legal papers and, in fact appears in the very first Island deed, that from Seayk Sachem to Thomas Mayhew in 1654.

1666 Thomas Mayhew deeded the whole Island to his daughter Martha Tupper on May 15, 1666 together with other property including, "one sixth part of whale" as part of her portion.

This explains why, when in 1682 Matthew Mayhew sold Naushon to Wait Winthrop, Nonamesset is not included. However, in his Will which was not executed, Wait Winthrop named it as part of his property and carried on farming operations there.

1724 The Tupperes continued their claim to the island and on August 28 William Weeks, who with his brother John had a lease of Naushon from John Winthrop, wrote, "Sir, these are to let you know that the Tupperes have taken possession of Nonemesset. They came on the 25th day of August, in the night on the easternmost end of the island with about 20 men and with a small house ready framed, and with the help of these men they set up the house and enclosed it.

signed Will Weeks

It appears that for the next six months the Tupperes were in occupancy, for on February 23 1725/6 Winthrop received the following letter from Joseph Robinson: ". . . and also to lay before you an account of our proceedings with the Tupperes about nonamesset, and for that affair we have followed the directions your Hon. gave us, that so we turned off their creatures and burned down their cottage and essayed to carry off the old man, the Keeper, but could not get him off.

Joseph Robinson

It was not until after almost 100 years of litigation that in 1760 the claims of the Tupperes were finally settled.

1730 In a deed dated April 13, 1730 John Winthrop transferred the whole property, including Nonamesset to James Bowdoin and Naushon and the adjacent islands remained in the Bowdoin family for the next 113 years until they were bought by William W. Swain and John M. Forbes.

1760 Samuel Robinson who was born in 1758/9 says that his father, Paul moved there from Waquoit when he was about one year old, and this agrees with the statement of his sister Polly who says that the house at Nonamesset was built in 1760.

Samuel writes, "How long my father lived there I cannot tell. All that I can say is that he lived and died there and we carried his body across to Woods Hole where he was buried. Oliver Grinnell succeeded my father in the occupancy of Nonamesset."

1779 One of the raiding parties from British war ships is described:

N. Freeman to President of Council

April 2, 1779

"A party of them (the British) in their boats attempted to land at Woods Hole, but about 30 of our men posted there gave them a warm fire, which soon drove them off, and the boat went to Nonamesset, an island near Woods Hole, where they landed and killed a few sheep, cows and hogs the enemy had before left, and threatened to kill the family that lived there, because they said the d — rebels had been killing them."

1778 In Revolutionary times there were salt works and Freeman wrote, "We apprehended the designs of the enemy were to strip the islands of stock and destroy the salt works along the shore, as we have undoubted accounts they have accomplished."

1801 Josiah Quincy gives his impressions of Nonamesset at the beginning of the 19th century, "The names of these (Elizabeth Islands) are Nini-miset, Nashant, Pesk. We landed at the first which is separated from the second by a narrow creek, navigable by boats only. We dined at the house of Paul Robinson, Mr Bowdoin's principal tenant. Its appearance was antique but neat and comfortable. Everything about it indicated good living and thrift. The soil of the island is weak and sandy. All of the cluster appeared destitute of wood although I was assured there was enough in the interior."

From a number of references in his letters it is clear that James Bowdoin visited Naushon at times. On July 31st 1802 he wrote to Hon. Daniel Cony, "Whilst your daughter was engaged upon a visit to her friends in Sharon, Mrs Bowdoin, Sarah and I have been on a tour to Naushon Island, on which we spent a fortnight, and have returned home after a pleasant journey."

SALT WORKS AT NONAMESSET

1804 It was two years later when he wrote to his nephew James Temple Bowdoin, on March 20th, 1804, "As among the improvements of

Naushon to erect Salt Works I wish you to procure me Margraffe's, "Disertation sur le sel" common in ye French, or in ye translation, or any other work upon the subject of making and chrystalizing common salt. Do send me a hogshead of pure mineral salt taken from mines at Liverpool. Let it be put in a sack by itself and shipped by one of ye first vessels.

I have a particular reason for the request, it is for an experiment.

Also send me ye best chemical work extant; if it be Fournesoys take care that it be of the latest edition."

On July 12th he wrote, "Capt. Cony when last in Boston told me he could readily procure any kind of lumber for me. The reason I had in speaking to him arose from ye prospect of setting up salt works at Naushon this fall or next spring. I have now determined to have them erected and now forward ye dimensions of ye lumber therefore. The lumber is to be delivered on Naushon Island on or about 2 miles from Woods Hole which makes the easterly end of Vineyard Sound. Please to let Capt. Cony's order for the amount accompany the lumber, which shall be paid at the Island by Baalis Bullard on ye delivery of ye lumber.

We shall set out for the Island on Tuesday next, if we are well and no accident occurs. Let ye Captain of ye Coaster enquire for Mr Joseph Parker, merchant at Woods Hole, Falmouth."

1805 James Bowdoin wrote to his nephew Thomas L. Winthrop in March, "I observe what you say of Mr Bullard, and that ye things at the Island looked promising before ye drought, that he had procured the finishing 900 ft. of salt works.

1807 To the same, from Paris July 21st., "In regard to the Salt Works, notwithstanding the repeal of the duties on salt, I shall be disposed to continue the works and make some additions to them . . . my object is to increase ye evaporation without adding much to ye expense.

I am told that I may here avail myself of the swift tide water which runs three hours each way northwest of Paul Robinson's from the point of land which forms ye cove, lying to ye westward of the wall & from thence quite to the point of land opposite to Pine Island. The breadth of the channel, the depth of the water, ye nature of ye bottom, the rocks and flats at Low water & the shore at High water and also the elevation & shape of the banks above the beach, and also the real or probable swiftness of the current, these circumstances are all necessary to know (and) whether a mill can be built there to grind corn and to pump the salt water to be evaporated upon a plan which is found to answer in Europe, and which I propose to connect with my salt works."

James Bowdoin to William McClure

1807/09 "If you recollect I mentioned that I was about erecting a Salt works on my estate at Naushon Island which makes ye northern side of Vineyard Sound, and that I wished to obtain what information I could on the subject. As I have a large quantity of wood and peat on the Island I think the sea water being first evaporated in the sun, say 15 or 20 degrees, it might afterwards be reduced to salt by boiling. In this case salt pans and kettles upon the best construction ought to be procured.

Broгнаist recommends the setting of 6 pans of different sizes to cover a space of 100 ft. x 50 ft. with the fireplace in the middle of the length and under the two smallest pans, which are most exposed to the heat, and from which the water after being boiled for a time is conveyed to the 4 larger pans, 2 on each side, where a slower evaporation takes place and the salt is chrysalized, the 2 largest of these pans on each side, the 2 center ones 33 ft. x 21 ft.; the 2 smaller 33 ft. x 15 ft.; the largest of the 2 center pans is about 27 ft. x 22 ft. and the least of which is called the Poetan is about 22 ft. x 15 ft. If no information can be obtained relative to ye salt pans or method of boiling salt at the salt spring, . . . enquire if I can procure a dozen of 4 x 5, 18 in. deep with holes at one of the corners for the purpose of draining the water from one to the other. and with the necessary iron funnels therefore.

Would you let me know if cast iron ovens are made in Philadelphia and if so what is their size etc. and whether I could procure therewith a cast iron plate of an inch thick 2 ft. 3 in. wide by 4 ft. 6 in. long with a round hole in the middle, 1 ft. in diameter. This, I intend for an economical method of cooking and baking for a new house I am building at Naushon Island. I omitted to ask if the pans could be landed at Tarpaulin Cove on Naushon, which is a safe secure harbor on Vineyard Sound.

1809 Boston, Sept. 27. To Baalis Bullard, "I saw likewise that Nennimessett was very much neglected, the people employed there do the business of the island, acting under vague directions without you attending to see them executed. Indeed from the little care that had been taken of the salt works there I might have been saved the expense of building them, for from want of proper management of them I believe they have not produced the interest of the money they cost, whilst other salt works, Mr Parker's for example, had yielded 20%. Is Capt. Tilton engaged for Nennimessett, and what family do you intend for Onkytonky to keep the Tavern and take charge of the salt works there?"

1810 To Barnabas Chadwick (Successor to B. Bullard) Boston, Dec. 8th. "I sent by me Ephraim Price a \$50. bank bill to pay Mr Wm. Bradley for his 1/3 part of 251 bu. of salt made by him last summer. I allow him by the lease 3 sh. per bu. for the salt he has made, which is at the rate of \$4.

per hogshead. I cannot be obliged to buy either Mr Bradley's or Mr Robinson's salt dearer than I can buy salt for in Boston."

Nov. 24th to Seth Robinson at Uncatena, "I received your letter, and conclude that the salt store (in barn) has been correctly measured and that there is 1660 bushels. $\frac{1}{5}$ part being yours by the lease or 332 bu. at 3 shillings per bu. amount to \$176.

Observe in high winds and storms how high the water rises on the wharf on a level & also the height of the spray. These circumstances should be minutely attended to for the security of the above salt, within (the barn)."

1836 W. W. Swain to James T. Bowdoin, Oct. 21, "There are a barn and salt store on Nanamesset, one at Onkatonka, and a barn and salt store with 1500 ft. of salt works in operation, producing 1200 bu. of salt annually."

1845 Expense clearing swamp, from May 23 to June 28 — $73\frac{1}{2}$ days is \$73.50. It was planted with corn and potatoes, the crop was small owing to the ditch being stopped & a heavy rain flooding it. There was 70 loads of fish compost put on the 2 acres.

1847 June, schooner *Boxer* landed 352 bbls. fish at Nonamesset, 100 bbls were put on turnip land & 252 bbls on $2\frac{1}{2}$ acres of swamp & plowed in.

1848 When Palmer moved off Ephraim Lake was engaged. Said Lake, "agrees to board what hired men are wanted to assist him in farming & clearing land on Nonamesset, for which he is to paid not over \$2. a week and to take in part pay as much beef & pork as the hired help will consume. And he is to give his whole time and skill to the management of the farm.

If the owner wish to keep some milch cows at Nonamesset, butter is to be made by his family free of charge, giving him the waste milk for his pigs."

1850 Joseph Crapo was the next tenant and it was provided that, "The owners agree to hire said Crapo the farm comprising all the land east of the wall built by Ephraim Lake, the two meadows west of the house, the land enclosed by a wall, called Monsod, & the piece of land lying north of swamp between that and the water, called Newkit.

In conversation with him I told him we might agree to let him cut the salt grass on Nonamesset and Buck Island marshes, but right up to the marshes belongs to us. We are to make a barn cellar (foundation still remains east of the house) and he is to assist in digging it. Liberty was given him to move the old wall in front of the house out south in line with the south wall of the meadow. Whatever mud is drawn out & now lying on the upland he can take for his own use."

Joseph Crapo left in 1854 and from then until 1867 the tenants were primarily farmers, but after the coming of Oliver Grinnell (1867) the house

was occupied by Captains of the Naushon boats and yachts — Benjamin Besse, Captain Hansen, Captain Norton and Captain McCrae.

1923 The east and west houses on Monsod were built by Raymond and Amelia F. Emerson and were completed and occupied in Oct. 1923.

1930 At Newkit J. Malcolm Forbes built his house. It was designed by his father-in-law, Charles K. Cummings, and the contractor was Oscar Hilton. He and his family made it their summer home until his death in 1941. His wife, Ethel Cummings, and their five children occupied Newkit during the ensuing summers. Since her marriage to Copley Amory Jr. in 1944 the family has continued there up to the present time.

During the past ten years Copley Amory Jr. has conducted an extraordinary horticultural experiment in the valley and on the hillside north of the house. Here he has built high protecting stone walls and has planted many varieties of trees, vines, shrubs and flowers — notable are the camellias and azaleas. It is a revelation to see what will grow on the barren soil of Nonamesset if given the right care.

1930 The field west of the Nonamesset house was cleared and made available for a landing field for small aeroplanes at the request of Alexander Forbes and Walter Amory. During the next 15 years it was used occasionally as a landing field but it could only be used in favorable winds and it was so hazardous that it has been entirely discontinued.

1935 The farm house was taken as a summer residence by Walter S. Hughes. The house was restored, the great chimney in the living room opened up and the old beams and pine panelling brought to view after having been hidden by plaster and wall paper for many years. The upper windows and kitchen ell were added.

1935 Walter Hughes and family occupied the house for several summers, the last time in 1947 after the end of World War II. During the war the house was unoccupied and off bounds to all residents of Naushon as well as other visitors because, as described in a later chapter, the whole of the eastern end of Nonamesset was taken by the Woods Hole Oceanographic Institution for naval and military purposes and was declared a restricted area.

1951 The Nonamesset house was leased by the Oceanographic Institution for the use of Dr. Arons and his family and they have spent almost every summer there for the past ten years. The current lessees (1984) are Nicholas and Margaret Bancroft.

WOODS HOLE OCEANOGRAPHIC INSTITUTION

Porpoise Experiment

1955 In the summer of 1955 permission was given to Mr. and Mrs. William E. Schevill to camp out on a knoll on the southeasterly end of Nonamesset in order that they might carry on experiments on a captive porpoise, such as they had been previously engaged in, further south.

The small pond near the beach was enlarged and deepened and a porpoise was flown north from Florida and deposited in it.

During July, August and September Mr and Mrs Schevill made tape recordings of the noises made by the porpoise and studied its intelligence in various ways. They made a small float to which he came to be fed. In October he was set free.

As a result of these experiments Mr. Schevill says, "Our porpoise demonstrated that he, and presumably all other respectable porpoises and related minor whales, could find both his way and his food acoustically (by echo location), without recourse to eyesight.

This had been supposed by many, but not demonstrated before."

The project was under the auspices of the W.H.O.I. which has conducted extensive experiments on underwater sound transmission, and also on the noises made by whales, porpoises, fish and other undersea creatures.

N. B. In a recent conversation with Dr. Henry B. Bigelow he mentioned to me the fact that Mr Schevill probably knows more about whales than any man in the United States.

In a letter to me in reply to my query as to what title he preferred William Schevill disclaimed being either a Doctor or a Professor, said he is just a plain, "private citizen".

UNCATENA

1679 The history of Uncatena is much like that of Nonamesset. Old Hope, the Indian in his testimony given in 1679, "Saith that hee knew the little Iland lying next Xaconeesett called nonmeesett and a neck of land or little Iland called Uckatimest belonging to the great Iland called Catomucke."

This Island appears in many of the early deeds. During Bowdoin ownership it was used, not only for pasture and farming, but here James Bowdoin built salt works and a salt storage barn which stood on the stone abutment just west of the wharf.

At some time between 1800 and 1810, probably in 1809, the farm house was built, a typical Cape Cod cottage with huge central chimney, the base of

which is all that now remains of the original house. Seth Robinson was the first tenant and lived here until 1832.

1810 James Bowdoin in a letter to Baalis Bullard asked what family he had engaged to keep the salt works and the Tavern at Onkytonky.

This house as well as the Farm House and the Tarpaulin Cove house was considered a Tavern.

1828 Seth Robinson built the first bridge connecting Uncatena with Naushon as is recorded on a boulder below the southwest end of the bridge.

1833-1842 Ellery Brownell succeeded Seth and Zepheniah Robinson, and for some time the landing and house were known as Brownells.

1846 The large Uncatena wharf was finished in 1846 and it is recorded that the Nantucket steamboat, *Naushon*, landed here for the first time that summer. Henceforth the steamers landed all passengers and freight here until about 1920 when, owing to the deeper draft of the steamers and the more complicated schedules, the New Bedford & Marthas Vineyard Steamship Company decided that it could no longer arrange stops at Uncatena.

1870 The Oncatonka house was shingled and a shed built for Lemuel Besse, and five years later the house was repaired.

About every 7 years the wharf has had to have major repairs, the contractors always commenting, "The past work was poorly done but *this time* the work will be permanent."

1833-1882 There was intensive farming carried on all over Uncatena and even on Timmy Point. The farmers mentioned as living here after Brownell were Trasker, Pierce, Lewis, Woodworth, Wilcox, Thacher and Lemuel Besse.

1882 Uncatena ceased to be a farm and became a family residence in 1882 when J. Malcolm Forbes built his house just south of the old farm house, using that for dining room, kitchen and servant's quarters.

1890 In this year the land around the buildings was deeded to J. Malcolm Forbes.

1939 The heirs of J. Malcolm Forbes deeded this land to the Trustees of the Naushon Trust and obtained from them a 99 year lease of this tract, it seeming best for many reasons that all of the Naushon property be held in one ownership.

TARPAULIN COVE

Tarpaulin Cove Island was one of the earliest names given to Naushon. Who gave it is not known. I have never heard the name used elsewhere. Gradually Tarpaulin was used not so much of the island in general as for the Cove itself.

It was a safe shelter from the prevailing southwest winds, the best anchorage for coastwise traffic between Newport and Vineyard Haven, and was said to be the fifth port in importance along the Atlantic seaboard at one time in the 18th century.

1684 The first tenant whose name is known was Anthony Blaney who was living at the Cove in 1684 and probably built a house there. Blaneys Pond is named for him and on an early map Blaneys wigwam is shown on the east side of the pond.

1696 The first definite mention of a house comes from the Log of H. M. S. *Falkland*, which vessel lay at anchor, "from ye 22 of Desmb. to ye 30th Jany., being in all 39 days" and which records, "In this place is but one small house in which live one family . . . the house and watering place being about one mile from the ship, the land being covered with snow".

1707 In a letter from Wait Winthrop to Joseph Ffuller he stipulates, "that said Ffuller shall fit up the old house at the Cove and make it tenantable, and help pull down the house he now resides in". In 1708 Winthrop provides in his lease to John Weekes that the latter, "shall remove the house that Mr Ffuller now dwelt in & set it up at the eastern end of the Cove . . . and that also he shall sett up, build and finish another house at the Great Pond or West End and put a tenant therein."

Between 1760 and 1770 Zaccheus Lumbert built a house on the east side of the Cove.

During the Revolution the British war ships frequently based on the Cove and there were many engagements along the island shores.

1776 On Dec. 15th Captain Elisha Nye of Falmouth was ordered to enlist 68 men and officers for the defense of the Elizabeth Islands, log barracks built of timber from the Island having been built of sufficient size to accommodate 75 or 80 men. Entrenchments were made on the hill on the northeast side of the Cove and also behind the beach on the north side, and a single gun emplacement (now called Ft. Ralph) is still to be seen south of the Main Road.

1778 On Wednesday, May 20th, 1778, John Knight, Master of *Haerlem Sloop* and John Ford, Commander of the H. M. S. *Unicorn* reported, "Sent boats, man'd and Armed on shore to Disstray the Barracks and Fort . . . landed Marines and Sailors & burnt the Rebel Barracks and dismounted the guns in the fort."

Many detailed accounts of the years of the war will be found in the "Early History", in the chapter on the Revolution.

1784 Samuel Robinson wrote, "Tarpaulin Cove House was built on the site of an old house which was torn down to make way for it, the year after Peace, say 1784. I was then about 25 years old. I assisted in the building, helped to make and burn the bricks and burned the lime, also cut and carted timber, and enough there is of it in the old frame.

I candidly believe there is as much as is in three houses which they build at the present day. John Nye first lived in it, after him came Shadrack Robinson, and then I believe some tenants from the Vineyard whose names I do not recollect."

It seems strange that our coastwise traffic, instead of increasing with the growth of the country, has, ever since the 18th century, been slowly diminishing.

There was a constant flow of ships, brigs, schooners and every type of sailing vessel throughout the 18th century and with the coming of the 19th, the whaling industry brought a new influx of barks and briganteens through the Sound and into Buzzards Bay. Vessels were almost always to be seen in Tarpaulin Cove waiting for the turn of the tide. There was a brisk trade in beef, mutton and vegetables and the farmers had a prosperous business and were ready to pay substantial rents for the farms. Instead of feeling isolated they and their families were in the main stream of trade, news and seaboard activity. In the days before railroads and when the highroads were few and rough most travel was by sea and in outposts such as Tarpaulin the farmers and lighthouse keepers were the first to have news from abroad, from the Provinces, from the Pacific, from the West Indies and South America as well as from the cities and towns all along the coast.

The tavern at the Cove must have been the first resting place on land for many a traveller after his long voyage.

We do not know what the earliest Cove houses were like — probably typical Cape farm houses — but we have the above description of the Tavern built about 1784. We have always believed that this is the present Cove House and there is no record of any drastic change in it except for an account given to Alice Howland by Capt. Olsen in 1936.

He tells, "that in the spring of 1886 he and another man walked to the Cove. David Beetle had charge and asked them into the house — very old, square, shingled, two stories. Thinks it was on the site of the present house. Front door faced east, big chimney in the center of house and huge fireplace in the living room on right. They took chairs right into the fireplace and sat, two on each side. Big crane with hooks. . . . The house was remodelled about a year later, Charles Burdick a Woods Hole contractor did the work. The

ceilings in the old house were lower and the roof was lower. About 50 ft. north of the house was a bowling alley, running east and west, housed in. It was falling to pieces but every board was covered with initials and the names of sailors and others. A small barn and shed were the only other buildings."

Nowhere in any record has been found any account of such changes as are indicated in the above description. There are complete details of the building of the bowling alley in 1854 and in 1864 John W. Gifford made a kitchen addition at his own expense which cost \$174.25. Burdick repaired the Upper wharf in 1885 and he built the present Farm House in 1893 but there is no indication, except for Captain Olsen's account, that he did extensive work at the Cove.

It was in 1935, just before this account was given to A. F. Howland, that the old house at Nonamesset was restored by Walter S. Hughes, and the great chimney and fireplace discovered. I believe that it was this hearth, which will accommodate two persons on each side, which Capt. Olsen recollected, it having been sealed up for perhaps fifty years.

The following letter by Mr. William J. Robinson describes the house as I (A. F. E.) first remember it, with the Post Office sign over the front door, the cages for letters on the store counter and the shelves covered with canned goods, small wares, hard candy and a few groceries.

The parlor to the right of the front door was the Sailors Free Reading Room which was established and maintained for some 20 years by the Boston Seamen's Friend Society. They paid the farmer's wife \$100 a year for its care. The old harmonium with its Vox Humana was a great attraction.

The Post Office was established in 1891 and was discontinued after 1910.

1898-1910 "Since I have (quite possibly) a more thorough knowledge of the trails, paths and roads from the Blue Gate at the Cove to the West End shores of Quicks Hole than any person alive today, I am more than interested in the "Early History of Naushon Island" as I lived at the Cove from the age of ten years to the age of 22 years when my father, William A. Robinson, was caretaker and postmaster there from 1898-1910.

I used to trap mink and muskrat when all the ponds were frozen over and, on skates, with the natural curiosity and exuberance of a young boy explored practically every inch of the shores of the Sheep Pond, the West End Pond and the French Watering Place.

I spent some time at the East End Farm and many, many times went to Woods Hole on the *Coryell* with Captain Olsen and Mr Studley (Mr. Studley, who was for many years engineer of the *Coryell*, was the grandfather of Capt. Richard Alberts, now, in 1960, captain of the *Fawn*).

The last Superintendent at the East End that I knew was Mr Morrison.

My father took over the Cove from Mr Merithew.

Once, on a Sunday, my father and I took off early in the morning on foot with our lunch and two large tin pails to pick blackberries for a pot pie, and at noon ended up at the West End farm house where Frank Peterson (the telephone lineman) lived. On the way back to the Cove we took a different trail and found some good berries on a hill overlooking Kettle Cove, then ranged back and somewhere, I don't recall if it was near the West End or the South Shore or North Shore, my father showed me the crumbling foundation of where a house had been and told me that a Robinson had built a house there and spoke of a John Robinson, a Shadrack Robinson and an Isaac Robinson. I asked him if we were related to them and he said he did not think so because his father (my grandfather Joseph E. Robinson) had come from New Orleans.

Last time I was at the Cove it was all boarded up and no one there.

The year before that I ran in there (with my outboard) and there was a girl there with a dog. She said she was Edward Forbes' daughter and was going to restore the place. She let me come in to see the old store and Post Office. The old letter rack was still there, but she couldn't restore that place . . . the old candy case where I used to steal candy when my mother wasn't looking. She couldn't put back the old pot bellied stove in the Sailors Free Reading Room where I read all the books of Dumas, Thackery, Dickens, George Eliot and others, and she couldn't put me back of the counter in the store where I used to cancel letters with the old hand stamp when Walter Nickerson sailed in from Woods Hole with the mail. I wanted to go upstairs and see my old bedroom where I slept for 12 years in the southwest corner. I did not mention it for fear she might not understand.

Today I would like to go over to Timothy John's grave and pick a hat full of wild strawberries as I used to.

William J. Robinson

P. S. I wonder if Mr Edward Forbes remembers a saddle horse called Buckskin? I used to ride Buckskin back and forth from East end Farm to Tarpaulin Cove when I went home Sundays to eat dinner with my folks.

He may remember Jack Ventura who used to come to the Cove for the sheep round up. And do you know the spot near the Yellow Gate that used to be called 'J. M. Forbes Narrow Escape'?"

The above are extracts from a letter of Mr. Robinson to A. F. E. dated July 25th, 1958, from 26 King Street, Worcester.

1910-1917 Following William Robinson the caretaker was Lawrence Creamer and in 1915 John Olsen spent a year at the Cove before he went to the West End; after him came John Donald.

1917-1938 Clarence King and his wife occupied the Cove for 21 years and were familiar to many of the family now living. They were a study in contrasts, she, very stout, genial and slow moving; he, small, wiry, with a thin face, quick and active.

It was in their time that the flow of schooners, steamers and coastwise vessels slackened in Vineyard Sound, partly from diminution of their numbers and partly because they chose the shorter and safer route through Buzzards Bay and the Cape Cod Canal.

Mrs. King mentioned one of her occasional visitors, the wife of the captain of a coaster from Maine who was hoping to match yarn for a sweater when she shopped in New York in a couple of days, and her satisfaction in showing the completed sweater on dropping in on her return trip down east.

It was with greatest difficulty that the Kings were persuaded to leave Tarpaulin after the doctor said that Mr. King's health was too precarious to spend another winter there.

1938-1943 The Kings were succeeded by Lovell George and his wife, and they, too, became deeply rooted there.

1941 For the first time since the lightkeeper's house was built in 1887, fifty four years before, the Tarpaulin Cove Light was without a resident Keeper.

The last Keeper, Tolman Spencer, who belonged to either the Gay Head or Mashpee tribe of Indians left on September 4th, 1941. Thenceforth the Georges were the only family at the Cove.

It was during their occupancy that the United States entered the Second World War and the two Army Posts were established on the Island.

The Army built a wharf on the northeast side of the Cove to service these Posts.

1943 The Trustees decided to discontinue employing a permanent caretaker when the Georges left, to go to the Farm. Thus after some 260 years Tarpaulin Cove was without a resident farmer or caretaker.

Amelia Forbes did not want to see the Cove abandoned and she decided to undertake a project of intensive farming. In October, 1943, the Trustees agreed to give her a year's lease of the Cove Farm and she also took charge of the Island flock of sheep. She spent the winter of 1943/44 at the Cove and brought from Montana a herd of Hereford cattle, 10 steers and 60 heifers and prepared to do extensive farming. The very day her second lease began, Sept. 14, 1944, the hurricane hit the Island, scattered or killed a large part of her herd, broke down all communications and posed such a problem of rehabilitation for the whole island that she decided to give up her lease and her occupation of the Cove.



1944-1948 For these next four years the house was unoccupied.

1948-1951 Dr. Kark, a friend of William H. Forbes, rented the house for three summers.

The Cove was untenanted for a number of years, until it was taken by Anne Forbes in the late '50s. She has made extensive repairs and still in 1960 has summer occupancy.

TARPAULIN COVE LIGHTHOUSE

1759 The fourth lighthouse to be built upon our coast was the Tarpaulin Cove Lighthouse, built by Zaccheus Lumbert of Nantucket in 1759. It was preceded by the first, Boston Light (1716); the second, Beaver Tail off Newport (1740); and Brant Light on Nantucket (1754).

In 1762 Zaccheus Lumbert wrote the following petition to Gov. Francis Bernard, "Zacchues Lumbert of a place called Tarpaulin Cove of Chilmark in the County of Dukes Co., Innholder (shows) that he hath for the public good of the Whalemen and Coasters built a Lighthouse at said Cove at his own cost and charges and hath kept the same for three year past at his own expense (save that the people of Nantucket have found him in Oyl) and that the said Cove is a harbour much used by Great Numbers of Vessels, Coasters as well as Whalemen, and a lighthouse therefor no longer than your petitioner hath kept the same has been a means of saving many vessels from being lost, & found to be of great advantage to Navigation; and your petitioner is not of such Affluent Circumstances that he is able to continue the said Lighthouse and take care of it without he can have some further Encouragement than just the Oyl found, as he is obliged to give constant attendance thereupon to keep the light burning and as the affair is of Public Utility he hopes that your Excellency will make him an allowance therefore, at least as he keeps a Public Tavern, that he may be excused from paying any Duty of Exision on the liquors he sells in his house for the 3 years he hath kept such Lighthouse.

Zaccheus Lumbert

(Ordered that six pounds be paid for above)

1818 New Lighthouse was completed in 1818, the appropriation was made by Congress February 10, 1807.

In several letters written by James Bowdoin (then in Paris) to Hon. Albert Gallatin he protested against the building of a Government Lighthouse [Early History pp. 390-394] he claimed that such a building would greatly diminish the value of his Tavern as this might prove a rival Tavern and not

being under his authority, "may harbor disorderly and suspicious persons who may plunder and kill the stock."

This may explain why the lighthouse was not built until after the death of James Bowdoin, eleven years after the appropriation was made.

1887 The present dwelling house was built beside the lighthouse. Up to this time the Lightkeepers must have lived at the Tarpaulin house.

1891 The old Lighthouse Tower was demolished and a new brick tower built on the same foundation.

1941 The Tarpaulin Cove Lighthouse is no longer attended by a resident lighthouse keeper. The Aids to Navigation Officer at the Coast Guard Headquarters states that on Sept. 4, 1941 Tarpaulin Cove Light became automatic and its characteristic was changed to Flashing White every ten seconds. The keeper's house has, therefore, remained unoccupied. The Light is serviced from Woods Hole.



HOLLOW FARM AND COTTAGE LOT

The house at Hollow Farm was probably built before the middle of the 18th century. According to Samuel Robinson, "To the westward of Tarpaulin Cove, about 2 miles, there used to stand an old house. It was occupied by my grandfather, William Robinson when I was a boy. It was a very old house then. It was afterwards occupied by William Butler."

According to Seth Robinson his brother Zepheniah (1766-1827) lived at the Farm and Hollow Farm until he was 24 years old, James lived at the Farm and at Hollow Farm until he was 28 years old and Thomas, who died in 1806 lived at the Farm and at Hollow Farm all his life.

1824 On Crapo's map Hollow Farm is called Austins and evidently Beriah Austin, "a steady, likely man and a good workman with an axe," who was brought to Naushon as a woodcutter by Salem Town, lived here for a while before he moved to the West End in 1833.

1834 It was occupied for a year or two by George Weeks.

1850 After the tenancy of Weeks it was unoccupied and in 1850 was moved into the valley near the Cove by Wilson a Pilot, "At his own expense (cost about \$250). He is to move and fit it up and occupy the house rent free for 7 years and after that the rent is to be \$50."

1877 (Note by J. M. F.) "Sold house to Oliver C. Grinnell to be moved this fall by him to Woods Hole."

Charles Grinnell tells, "My father brought the house over to Woods

Hole. It was easy to 'flake' because the sills and plates are 'scooped out' to receive the planks, as they found when they moved it the second time. The planks used to run vertically and were easy to slip into place along the sill, and then the plate was slipped into place along the top, and 'that was all there was to it'. There was never a nail drove into that house; it was all put together like that, and wooden pegs to secure it. It was 'flaked' the same way when it was moved down the first time from Holly (Hollow) Farm to Fox Valley, where my father moved it from when he bought it. My father pointed out the Fox Valley foundations to the house. It stood quite near the shore and the wall in the gully."

Mrs Naomi Peterson (widow of Frank Peterson, tenant at the West End 1898-1904) gave this account, "The Hollow Farm House stood alongside the wall in the gully . . . there used to be an apple or pear tree near the wall as evidence of the house that once stood there in the hollow.

J. M. F. had it torn down saying, 'Well, it's a fine old house but I don't want it here, we'll have to move it to some other place on the Island!' It was 'flaked' and towed to Woods Hole by Charlie Grinnell's father and re-erected on Crow Hill. The main house only is the original Naushon structure."

Mrs. Peterson bought the house on its present site, the end of Millfield Street. The present ell was added before she got it.

N. B. The above accounts were given by Charles Grinnell and Mrs. Peterson to Alice Forbes Howland on May 21st, 1936.

COTTAGE LOT

1824 Salem Town ordered barracks to be built for some 15 woodcutters near the spot where they were working. The cottages at the Cottage Lot were built about 1824 and there is also a cellar hole just northeast of the Gap-in-the-Wall gate where there probably was a cottage built at the same time. The cottages were standing in the '70s but whether they were taken down or fell down has not been recorded.

WEST END HOUSES

1708 In the lease of 'Tarpolin Cove Island' to John Weekes it was stipulated that he, "will also erect, sett up, build and finish another house at the Great Pond or West End, and put a tenant therein."

The house was evidently built, not at the West End Pond, but at the West End.

The early accounts speak of a very old house occupied by William Robinson and Seth Robinson says that his eldest brother Shadarack (1757-1841), lived in the West End House from 1790 to 1808.

1811 David Tilton appears to have lived there and in the following 20 years several of the Robinson families were probably there.

It seems obvious that Robinsons Hole was named for early members of that family.

1833-1842 Beriah Austin was tenant and after him, Oliver Grinnell.

1851 "Hired Jno. W. Gifford the land west from the fence that crosses by Deer Hill to Robinsons Hole, reserving to Mr Wilcox all the privileges enjoyed by him under our agreement, except that of keeping 20 sheep, he, Wilcox to pay Mr Gifford rent for those privileges . . . vis. \$15 per annum for the house, firewood, tillage & pastureland, J. W. Gifford to pay the Island \$150. per annum therefore."

1854-1857 "Moses Adams is to take the West End farm now occupied by Wilcox . . . and pay \$25. per year for it, no right in the herring pond fishery and no right in the cranberry bog."

1857 Jos. R. Luce, Holmes Hole, Mass.

I conclude to hire you the West End farm for 1 year & longer if we are satisfied . . . \$25. per year rent, wood free of charge, but must be from dead top trees and taken from such places as we shall direct. You are to have no right in the cranberry bog and only such right in the herring fishery as may be hereafter agreed upon, but are to fit up the outlet to the pond at your own expense & keep it in order until we ascertain if the fishery is likely to do well. You are to collect drift stuff, rock weed etc & manure well what land you can cultivate, and especially to protect the Island from poachers. This is the most important of your duties. Upon your diligence and faithfulness in this particular will depend the time you can stay there."

William W. Swain

1865-1880 During the tenancies of Reuben Dyer and others to that of William Brightman who retired in about 1880 there were intensive experiments in farming and sheep raising in the West End.

1889 New house and barn built during the tenancy of Angus McPhee, and thereafter short tenancies by Howes, Maury, Merihew and Clinton Davis. Frank Peterson came in 1898 and stayed until 1904 and he was succeeded by Allen H. Reed who lived there for ten years, from 1904 to 1915.

1916-1930 In 1916 John Olsen, who first came as boatman to the Farm in about 1912, and spent the year 1915-1916 at the Cove, moved to the

West End and lived there for 23 years as caretaker, clearing the roads, looking after the sheep and guarding the western end of the Island. In 1939 it was decided to discontinue a resident caretaker and John Olsen and his wife moved to Pasque, but continued to keep an eye on the West End. It is a great satisfaction to report that he is still (1960) living at the old house at Pasque.

1944-1960 William H. Forbes had the house put in order and for the past 16 summers it has been occupied by Dr and Mrs Robert E. Johnson and their family.

1984 Since 1968 the West End House has been occupied by the Oliver Braziers.

Chapter III

FARM OPERATIONS, DREDGING, PEST CONTROL

FARM OPERATIONS

1896 Summary of the general management of Naushon from the period when J. M. F. made his first visit in the summer of 1833.

The old Bowdoin system was to have the Owner or his Attorney occupy the square old Mansion House, thinly built for summer use like a Southern Plantation House, for a few summer months, getting his supplies for himself and the large number of guests he usually entertained from the farm and its yard, mutton and chickens and pigs and beef and vegetables and butter

“Good heavens! what a weekly splutter
Of beef and eggs and cheese and butter,
Or, if we haply change the theme,
'Tis butter, eggs and milk and cream.”

In 1833 the farmer, hired on wages, was Mr. Pardon Gifford, an honest old man of Quaker origin, who continued to take his orders direct from the Mansion House when open, but when shut for over half the year he did much as he pleased, reporting semi-occasionally to the Owner or his Agent.

A previous Agent, Mr. Rotch, had left suddenly before 1830 and William W. Swain was appointed in Mr. Rotch's place. He was an influential oil merchant of New Bedford and when J. M. F. first remembers the Island Mr. Swain had come to be called “Governor” and seemed permanently established as agent of the Bowdoins, who resided chiefly in England although retaining their American citizenship.

When J. M. F. came closer to the Island by his marriage (to the niece of Governor Swain) he found the old Bowdoin system in full force, and this was continued until Governor Swain and J. M. F. became sole owners. They continued the system until its utter failure as a source of revenue became obvious, and was not changed until the death of Governor Swain when J. M. F. became the owner.

He concluded to try a new system: to have a tenant at the farm who would supply the Mansion House with milk and provisions and labor on stipulated terms, selling the rest of the produce at his pleasure, paying rent for the East End up to the Luck (Lock?) Gate Wall in wool.

This system continued under one or two changes at the farm house until about 1873 when the owner leased the farm to A. C. White for three years.

White wished to move to Tarpaulin and rent it, at which time he transferred the remainder of his three-year lease to Col. William H. Forbes, who

probably took it as a temporary experiment but continued on from year to year with much work and some loss to himself, until James Cameron left the farm.

At this time three important new houses had been built and occupied by the owners' children, who all became competitors for the produce of the farm.

Under these new circumstances the system showed signs of not working well for the comfort of the owner who wished to have the Mansion House more thoroughly made the seat of Government than it could under the tenant system and the farm with its agricultural interests made entirely subservient to the real or supposed wants of the Mansion House and its Proprietors.

This autocratic power once was, and may be again, one of the most important things to be kept absolutely in the hands of the owner so long as he is solvent and of reasonably sound mind.

The pregnant question now is whether it is not better to revert to the old Bowdoin system of having the Mansion House occupants hire the farmer, who is entirely under their control, instead of continuing the tenancy arrangement.

AGREEMENT BETWEEN J. S. RUSSELL AND F. H. LAMBERT
WHO IS EMPLOYED THIS DAY AS FARMER AT NAUSHON

1. Period of agreement, Jan. 1, 1898 to March 31, 1898, inclusive.
2. On or before Mar. 15 owner will notify farmer of his intentions.
3. The wages of farmer and wife shall be \$66. cash per month.
Rent free — this applies to the 3 rooms S. E. of front door.
Coal, wood, oil, soap and matches free.
8 qts. skim milk per day free, if so much is made on the farm.
Privilege of boarding help @ \$14. per month & at 50¢ per day.
Privilege of buying extra farm produce at 10% under retail price.
Ice free.
4. The duties of farmer and wife shall be:
To devote their whole time and attention to the affairs of the owner.
To board what help the owner wishes at price stated, this to include care of bedrooms and bed linen when help lodges at the farm house.
To board the owner or his friends at farm house when owner wishes and care for the 3 rooms S. W. of the front door, these rooms being kept for the exclusive use of the owner. Farmer may charge \$1. per day per person so boarded.
To provide all help needed for the care of the house and dairy except that a farm hand will start the kitchen fire in the morning, fill the tank when needed, look after the men's sitting room and deliver the milk at the dairy door. All other work of the house, preparation of food, washing

- dishes, and dairy utensils falls on farmer's help, also making butter. When using more than 8 qts per day of skim milk farmer shall pay 3¢ per qt., also 6¢ per qt. for all whole milk and 40¢ per qt. for cream.
5. Farmer is expected to work with the men and not simply oversee them.
 6. Farmer is to engage the farm help, subject to owners approval.
 7. Farmer is to supply what stationery he needs for his own or farm matters.
 8. All stock, tools, furniture etc. at farm will be supplied by owner and is his.
 9. Men on the farm are expected to work 10 hours each day, weather permitting, and when at a distance shall take their dinners with them.
 10. Only necessary work is expected on Sundays, July 4th, Thanksgiving Day and Christmas, but in case of crops spoiling, deer to be cut up, etc. all hands are expected to take hold. For extra time farm hands shall receive 10¢ per hour.
 12. Wages paid & accounts rendered at end of each month.
 13. Travelling expenses allowed only when on business of the owner.
 14. Farmer is expected to supply good food of quality and quantity proper for working men. If the owner is not satisfied with the food he may call the farmer's attention to the matter and request an improvement.

(Signed) J. S. Russell, Acting Manager for J. M. F.
Frederick H. Lambert

NAUSHON FARM ICE, REPAIRS, RENEWALS

1811-1942 Before considering the farm plant, a word may be said about one of the essential crops, the ice crop.

In 1811 James Bowdoin wrote to his nephew: "If any of your acquaintances has got a good ice house I should be obliged to know of them the method ye external air is kept from the ice, whilst it is allowed a certain circulation. If either of the Messrs Perkins would give the description of their ice houses and the manner of putting, preserving and taking out the ice . . . I might draw from them what might answer to preserve the ice in my ice house. Should Capt. Palmer come to Naushon with Sir Grenville Temple, I should be obliged to him if he would visit the ice house of Mr Perkins, in order to advise me."

For the following 130 years ice was procured from Marys Lake and one ice house after another was built. The climate is so mild that in many years the ice was too thin to harvest. Captain Olsen always claimed that if it was not thick enough to cut before the first of February, no crop could be expected.

In latter years after there were more houses to supply it was customary to buy ice in Maine and have it shipped by schooner direct to Naushon. Eventually the schooners disappeared and for a few seasons it was shipped by rail. This, with all the loss and handling involved, proved too expensive and it was decided to equip the houses with gas or electric refrigerators.

In 1942 the cutting of ice was discontinued and the ice house abandoned.

- 1844 Addition to barn built. New ox cart (broad wheels) built at Westport by George H. Gifford. The following year brought from him a second ox cart tires 5 in. wide, oak floor, better than the first.
- 1849 Brick cistern built in cellar, 17 ft. 9 in. long, 6 ft. high, capacity 240 bbls.
- 1852 New crib, addition to cow barn & stone cellar, stone hen house.
- 1870 Old salt house moved from Uncatena to farm. (Is this the slaughter house? — A. F. E.)
- 1874 Rebuilt blacksmith shop, also small building in the Farm yard.
- 1891 Farm barn struck by lightning and destroyed, also one bull and five cows.
- 1893 New Farm House built. The contractor was Charles Burdick.
- 1914 Barracks built west of house. Extensive changes and repairs and new bath rooms for Superintendent and for men. Refrigeration plant installed in slaughter house.
- 1921 Cottage built east of farm house, called Shepherd's Cottage.
- 1937 New fireproof roof and dormers added to house. Old cow barn rebuilt.

No detailed account is given of the normal farm livestock. There were at times a herd of about 30 cows and large flocks of poultry, these especially when Ralph E. Forbes was manager. There were also turkeys, ducks and pigs. For many years there was a flourishing vegetable garden north of the farm yard presided over for many years by James Troup which supplied, not only the farm, but the families as well.

In the '30s and '40s these farming activities were given up. The children were advised to have Pasteurized milk and with the increased demand for all supplies and purely seasonal requirements of the families, it was found to be more economical to get all supplies from the mainland.

1949 The Jeep truck, bought this year, marked the first step in mechanization of the farm. This has been followed by tractors, chain saws and other labor-saving machines, and finally by a truck for deliveries and trash collection. The last of the farm horses were sold in the fall of 1951.

Renewals and renovations continue and for the past ten years are not described.

LIGHT PLANT AND SCHOOL

1925 A Delco Light Plant was housed in a small power house behind the slaughter house. This is to give light and power to the farm buildings, also the Shepherd's Cottage, Mansion House, Stable, Calf Pasture, Pony Pasture and Community houses and stable, also the Stone House, North Pasture and their stables.

1930 The specifications of Delco Plant bought in 1926 are: four 2½ K.W. generators and two sets of batteries, capacity 160 amp. hours each. The average peak load last summer was 60 amps., the approximate output of three generators, leaving one in reserve in case of accidents. The probable new demand would increase the load to full capacity of the plant. Raymond Emerson purchased one second-hand generator and one new one. He considers that the Delco plant is only temporary and that eventually it will be better for the Island to get electricity from the mainland. The line was extended to Hadley Cove and the Harbor Cottage.

1938 A new electrical plant was installed which serviced Uncatena, Newkit and Veckatimest, all of which had formerly had small individual plants. It has two units, one large and one small.

In 1939 it was reported that the present plant is much more efficient than the old one. There is abundant electricity available for any use except electric stoves, which should not be installed.

1942 The power plant at the farm was totally destroyed by fire in the early morning of Jan. 8th. We could not buy new equipment on account of war priorities. We procured and installed in the S. E. corner of the cow barn, which had been fireproofed, a Lister Diesel Engine with a 12 K.W. generator.

1945 It became apparent we could not rely on the power units purchased in 1942 and the question of connecting with the mainland power was considered, but not found feasible at present.

The Trustees ordered two new Caterpillar Diesel engines, the larger, a 30 K.W. unit and the smaller a 20 K.W. unit. When both are in use they should take care of all present needs, with a margin for expansion.

1951 A new generator was bought.

NAUSHON SCHOOL

1938 The question has arisen as to whether a primary school should be established. There are now seven children of school age whose parents are employees and live at Naushon throughout the year.

1939 As required by law, a school was established during the winter with Miss Ruth L. Farrand as teacher. Attendance was equivalent to 5½ pupils.

1943 The Naushon School with enrollment of five children: one Bosworth, one Cassilis, and three Wilsons has been held the past year in the Uncatena laundry. The teacher, Miss Lane, has resigned but the School Superintendent, Mr. Rolphe, hopes to find a successor. Salary of the teacher has been raised from \$1,200. to \$1,300., comparable with Gosnold School.

\$400. is granted by the State to Town of Gosnold as special appropriation for the Naushon School, remainder is paid by the Town.

The Naushon School is not again mentioned in the Trustees' Reports and it was apparently discontinued after 1943.

1955 There are again several children of school age living at Naushon and it has seemed best that they attend school in Woods Hole and Falmouth. Arrangements have been made with the Town of Gosnold to pay for their schooling and part of their transportation costs.

WELLS

Needless to say every house which was built was provided with a well. In the records no mention is made of the water situation until modern pumps and plumbing and greatly increased use of water made some of the original wells insufficient for the needs.

1885 "To supply the farm house with an adequate supply of water a well was sunk in the Mansion House Meadow near the willows west of the house.

We are trying an artesian well at Captain Cammett's house."

1907 "For a long time there has been great difficulty in getting an adequate water supply for the farm. Some of its water has come from the Stone House well in the horse pasture, and there has been friction between Mr. Morrison and Capt. Hansen of the *Bobolink* wharf, who could seldom spare water from the Stone House for the farm. In case of fire the farm would have been practically destitute of water.

After much consideration of possibilities, whether to put a force pump at Marys Lake, we decided to take a chance and dig deep for a well near the Farm House in the Mansion House Meadow. It may be of interest to note that the Falmouth plumber asked permission to try his Witch Hazel. I, [R. E. F.] agreed to let him do so. It went down in several places. Hathaway of New Bedford was employed to do the job. He, quite independently, picked out one of the places indicated by the Witch Hazel. Water was found in this place; it has proved to be a good supply of excellent water. They dug for over 50 ft. We planned to have the well ten ft. in diameter, but owing to a cave-in it was 16 ft., going up for 15 ft. in height in a dome shape, walled in by rocks, the first dome rested on a second dome, also 15 ft. high. Then a 2½ ft. glazed tile pipe was put in the rest of the way up. Cellar was dug with concrete floor and masonry sides, plastered and whitewashed, for the force pump to stand in. The force pump drove water into three nearest farm cisterns.

Mrs. Hughes made a generous present for the expense of the well and \$91. was used for putting in some nice clean wash tubs for the dairy pans and utensils. They had previously been washed in the *same tub used in washing clothes.*

1909 New tank put in farm house. Formerly one of the men had to pump water from the cistern by hand, for the use of the house. Now a hot air engine pumps water into the large cistern.

A new cistern was built on top of hill north of farm house.

1911 It was discovered the new well was contaminated. Mrs. Hughes offered to make a present of a new well, and we tried driving for water near the pear trees in the meadow. Struck a good supply at 85 ft. The large hot air engine was installed in the well and pipes led into the farm where all piping was replaced with new pipes."

1915 Well to supply Community was dug northeast of Shore House.

1921 New well for Mansion House driven in valley south of house.

1923 At Monsod 25 ft. well was dug west of stable. Good supply of water. The pump run by Delco storage batteries which were in the East House cellar. In 1954 a new Kohler plant was installed in pump house east of well. The pump set in the well.

1928 At Captain's Cottage new well was driven.

At Hadley Cove H. S. Forbes had well dug west of house.

1930 At Newkit two wells were dug, one on ridge N. E. of house, the other on beach south of house, the latter giving excellent supply of good water.

At Uncatena new well dug.

At Goats Neck well dug to supply Harbor Cottage.

1932 At Veckatimest well to supply house and barn. New well dug in 1957.

1948 Pump installed at Marys Lake to supply Lichen Cottage.

1959 At Uncatena driven well hit water at 60 ft. Promises good supply for both Uncatena House and Uncatena Lodge.

This record does not pretend to be complete.

BRIDGES AND WHARVES

1828 The bridge to Uncatena was built by Seth Robinson and the bridges and causeway to Nonamesset were built at about the same time. Before this the farmers must have forded the three channels at low tide with oxen and horses.

1845 Sept. 18. Made a beginning on the new Uncatena wharf, drilling rocks preparatory to blowing, distance from high water mark to low, 30 ft., distance low water mark to contemplated end of wharf, 86 ft. Total length of wharf 116 ft. It is intended to make the 30 feet from high to low water mark of stone and the remainder 86 feet with logs. Wharf 15 ft. high. Island to furnish all timber except capsills & plank & Spikes. Contractors to build cribs and sink them, to hew the sleepers and frame them and the knees also — brace it with logs from the Island. Expense of building new wharf, carpenters' bills, 76 days work @ \$1.25 = \$95. in addition lumber for wharf and there was done by hired men and oxen, charging a pair of oxen same as a man, 353½ days work.

1846 New wharf completed & steamboat *Naushon* came to it for the first time.

1858 Contract between J. M. F. and Sim Hamlin and E. E. Swift (father of Edward E. Swift now [1960], living in Woods Hole, age over 100 years). Mr. Lake to deliver the poles and knees in the rough on the wharf, Contractors to drive piles, 7½ x 3½ feet apart, 2 fast piles, one near each outer corner, 3 fender piles, and at each corner to be left high above the wharf.

They are also to build an extension to the Inner Harbor wharf 37 ft. x 20 ft., the piles to be 5 ft. x 10 ft. apart, 2 fast piles and no fenders . . . wharf 18 in. higher than the old wharf.

1870 Captain Cromwell of steamer *Monohansett* making increasing difficulties about coming to our wharf, we last year decided to extend it and cut the piles in winter. Contracted with Mr. B. B. Dunlap of New Bedford to complete the extreme length, 75 ft., same width as before, 22 ft.

The yacht wharf at Bulls Neck has been extended and planked.

1879 Uncatena wharf needs considerable repairs, which we are preparing for, and also for digging out a steamer channel across the ends, 180 ft. x 24 ft. each way, one foot deepening. Also deepen wharf channel one foot say, 360 ft. x 24 ft.

1881 Have been making, under Capt. Borden of New Bedford, very extensive repairs in planking, sill and piles almost entirely renewing Upper Wharf. A large part of Uncatena wharf also renewed — with much criticism of work done in 1879.

Col. William H. Forbes has also extremely repaired his *Bobolink* wharf.

1881/2 Also built a winter shed on the south side of the Inner Wharf for the new steam launch *Albacore*.

1880 Ways and a railway large enough to take the *Azalea*, built at Upper wharf.

1884 First bridge repaired and the side rails made of twisted red cedar gave a rustic look.

During the following 20 years no great changes noted, only routine repairs.

1904 Two stone causeways built, one between Monohansett and Fishermans Island and the other along the Molasses Pond Beach.

1908 An exceptionally fierce storm in the late autumn of 1907 smashed the stone wall built to protect Molasses Pond, so this had to be rebuilt.

1909 Capt. Olsen reported that the large Ways have given out seriously. They were still able to take the *Coryell* but extensive repairs were made.

1909 Mrs. Cary gave to the Trustees a new wharf on the site of the former wharf used by the passengers for the *Wild Duck*. She requested that it be called the Wild Duck Wharf and picnic parties are notified by a sign that they are welcome to land here.

1910 Breakwater northwest of the North Pasture House was built by Ralph E. Forbes, built largely of rocks taken out of the Mansion House Meadow. Uncatena Wharf drastically repaired.

1916 Railroad for *Coryell* at Upper Wharf rebuilt.

1919 New marine railway was built at Upper Wharf large enough to haul a boat drawing 10 feet or less. It had movable sides so that boats could be slipped out on greased skids and moved to positions nearby.

1923 Bobolink Wharf was rebuilt by W. H. Forbes family.
Uncatena Wharf repaired.

1926 Permission was given to Raymond and Amelia F. Emerson to build a wharf and breakwater and boathouse in the cove west of the Monsod House. The wharf was built in 1926, the boat house in 1930, since swept to the head of Lackeys Bay three times by hurricanes, but the breakwater was not built until 1957. It was built by John H. Fish of Falmouth who did the excellent stone riprap near the bridges and built the causeway between Monohansett and Veckatimest.

R. E. Forbes built wharf southwest of Bobolink Wharf for the *Sahara*.

W. Cameron Forbes built shed north of Bobolink Wharf for storage.

1928/9 Henry S. Forbes built wharf 50 or 60 ft. long at head of Hadley Cove.

1930 J. Malcolm Forbes built wharf below his house at Newkit. Upper Wharf wholly rebuilt and raised 18 in. It has lasted about 35 years with only minor repairs.

New extensive shed, designed by Raymond Emerson, has been built southwest of the Upper Wharf and the harbor dredged in such a way as to provide covered berths for five boats. These are leased by members of the family. It has proved of great advantage to have the motor boats under cover.

Ruth F. Paine built a wharf below Harbor Cottage, opposite Bobolink Wharf.

Large boat house built on north shore of Hadley Cove by Malcolm Forbes for storage of Newkit and Uncatena boats.

1932 Goats Neck Wharf, which had been out of commission, was repaired.

1933 Uncatena Wharf was almost wrecked in heavy N.E. storm and was rebuilt and shortened by 40 ft. and the end widened from 22 ft. to 40 ft. and the whole wharf raised two feet in height. As New Bedford steamers no longer come in, the great length was not needed. Also the concrete sea wall was raised and the lawn behind it graded up.

The Trustees have built a stone wall along the northwest side of the Inner Harbor between the Cedar Wharf and Upper Wharf to preserve the trees along the shore and especially the great oak which stands at the edge of the bank. The wash of the motor boats is seriously eroding the banks along the shores of the harbor, and for this reason all boats are requested to slacken speed after passing through the Narrows.

1936 At Nonamesset Beach near the house, Walter S. Hughes built a substantial wharf.

New bath houses with seven compartments were set up at the South Shore.

1938 At Uncatena new rock breakwater was placed immediately north of and under the Uncatena Wharf, to protect the float on the west side, and boats moored west of the wharf.

1939 The great hurricane of Sept. 21, 1938 swept out first and third bridges and the causeway between Monohanset and Veckatimest. Pine Island to the north of the Nonamesset house was reduced to a reef; all bath houses and many boat houses were carried away or damaged. Most of the ponds near the shores, (even the Duck Pond beyond the Great Swamp), were flooded with salt water, as were many of the swamps.

Two bath houses, each with seven compartments, have replaced the old ones at the South Shore Bathing Beach.

The Wild Duck Wharf was rebuilt.

1943 A wharf on the northeast side of Tarpaulin Cove was built by the U. S. Army for servicing the Army posts at Mt. Surat and the Billiard Table Road.

A substantial wharf was built below Mink Point on Nonamesset by the Woods Hole Oceanographic Institution for servicing its explosives depot and laboratory.

1944 The W. H. O. I. deepened a small pond near the S. E. end of Nonamesset for conducting explosives experiments.

1945 On the night of Sept. 14, 1944 another devastating hurricane hit the Island, damaging the shores and bridges, sweeping away the Monsod boathouse, carrying one of the South Shore bath houses to the edge of the Jim Field, and the other to the first bend of the road north of the Bathing Beach.

1946 Of the three marine railways at the Upper Wharf the center one was built by Mrs. J. Malcolm Forbes for the use of Uncatena boats. Alice F. Howland has turned it over to the Trustees for the use of Island boats.

1950 One of the marine railways has been re-aligned and repaired.

1952 A cradle was built at the Upper Wharf, capable of holding the *Fawn*.

1955 The first, and to us most destructive, of the three hurricanes of 1954 struck Naushon on August 31st. All bridges to Nonamesset were completely swept away. First bridge was floated off its abutments and landed on Goats Neck. The causeway was shifted and torn to pieces. Third Bridge disappeared and no part of it has been found. The eastern abutment slipped into the channel and blocked it, and the shore of Nonamesset was cut back at the bridge, 40 feet.

Bobolink Wharf was damaged, as were many of the boats.

The heavy riprap which has been built on the approaches to the bridges should withstand future hurricanes and floods.

1956 The marine railway used for the barge has come to the end of its usefulness. The two railways further from the wharf require repairs to make them safe for the heavy loads placed upon them.

1957 It was voted to discontinue the Wild Duck Wharf and to make Bulls Neck available to visitors. The landing has been repaired and a ramp and float installed.

The Trustees no longer assume responsibility for Uncatena Wharf and for the past few years its upkeep has been the responsibility of the J. Malcolm Forbes heirs.

The Bobolink Wharf has always been kept up entirely by the William H. Forbes heirs. The same is, of course, true of all the Island wharves attached to the summer residences.

DREDGING AND HARBOR IMPROVEMENTS

An immense amount of work has been done, through the years, in improving Hadley Harbor and its approaches.

1874 "The lone rock at the entrance to the Narrows has long stood a menace and a danger. Dunlap the wharf builder offered to pick it up for \$10. but a foot rule showed it not less than 12 ft. x 11 ft. x 5 ft., or at 13 ft. to the ton 70 tons! So he subsided but proposed to blow it and drilled a 2 ft. hole, 3 ft. deep. Captain Simpson of the Torpedo Corps, in answer to a letter from Paul S. Forbes kindly offered to try an experiment upon it and we sent the *Azalea* with Col. W. H. F. and wife to bring over the party and their dangerous implements, and after a rough voyage they landed safely here on Oct. 8th. On the 9th and 10th they exploded about 40 lb. of nitroglycerine, hoping to throw the pebble bodily in-shore, but they shivered it into many large pieces which we are still slowly lifting and carrying off, several estimated at 5 tons and over, which the scow has picked up, and yesterday Dunlap reported 5 ft. at low water. We hope to get out all leaving 8 ft. at ordinary low tide, widening our channel 30 ft. or 40 ft. and removing a great danger for the yacht in dark or *careless* times.

Most of this was done by Dunlap, pretty well on the whole, but with overmuch boasting and talk.

I've also with mud dredger cut off the west point of the Narrows about 30 ft., making the channel 140 ft. wide. . . ."

1879 "We have cut off the south point of the Narrows by Mr. Hastings dredge. Capt. taking a triangle called 400 ft. base by 60 ft. Dredge now picking up pieces of rock left by the explosion. Took up 3 large rocks, leaving outer passage good for 6½ ft. water at low tide. (Rocks said to have weighed 20 to 30 tons each). Have cut off the east side of Narrows about 360 ft. by 60 ft. and am cutting 10 ft. off the west side which will make the channel 189 ft. wide, being more than double the old width.

The base of the triangle dug out is called 360 ft. x 78 ft. Our rough measurement from the inside points are: Bulls Neck shoal 280 ft. x 84 ft., East Point shoal 186 ft. x 72 ft., steamer channel 360 ft. x 24 ft.

Agreed with Mr John McDermot that he shall take out 6000 yards more, as I may direct, of mud, sand and rocks from my Inner Harbor, dumping it in the deep water as far as Uncatena buoy. . . . Government measure for the scows, price 18¢ per yd. measured in the scow."

1880 "Malcolm, largely at his own cost, added to the above . . . and much improved the Inner Harbor presenting to W. H. F. a new wharf with a basin around it.

Our best job has been the clearing out fragments of the nitroglycerine work, widening the Narrows about 80 ft. on the east side and cutting off Azalea Point inside — with a big corner cut off the west side. Besides this, Malcolm has cut off a wide shear of bank on the west side of the harbor from our wharf nearly up to W. H. F.'s old wharf (Cedar Wharf). He has also built a ship railway to take the *Azalea* or 20 ft. longer boats.

1884 This summer Commodore M. employed diver and his sloop to raise many stones in the harbor, including large ones on north side of Big Ledge. These were heaped on the two ends of Big Ledge, the S. E. heap being whitewashed to distinguish it in the dark. The channel north of Big Ledge is almost as good as the old one, south of it . . . and has largely increased channels for entering and leaving Hadley Harbor. The work was well done and the captain seemed honest."

1884-1917 No extensive dredging has been noted during these 33 years.

1917 Waldo E. Forbes, shortly before his death, made a gift to Naushon of approximately \$30,000 which was designated by the Trustees as "The Dredging Fund," with the following provisions:

"I request that this Fund be held primarily as a dredging fund. It is requested that it be used:

1. For the dredging of Hadley Harbor, Inner and Outer, including the maintenance of beacons, buoys, or other channel marks.
2. For the maintenance of Coryell Wharf and boat house and buildings

and the Ways; also maintenance and repairs of Bobolink Wharf & Ways.

3. Maintenance and repairs on *Coryell*, *Shelldrake*, *Onda* or their successors as farm boats, or on the farm rowboat at Nonamesset or its boat house and railway.

My hope is that it should not be used for the enlargement or elaboration of wharves or boats, but that if such elaboration is adopted, that it should be available, so far as it goes, for maintenance of the enlarged plant.

It is the plan that the primary use of the fund is for dredging; that if the dredging plan is adopted, the whole fund be used up in carrying out the plan . . . but if a part only is used that the balance or income from the balance be used for other purposes mentioned in this letter. In any case, at the option of the Trustees, the income could accumulate pending the making of dredging plans, or be used for the other uses herein mentioned."

This gift was accepted by the Trustees "with the greatest appreciation of your thoughtful and loving consideration of the Island interests."

1923 A program for dredging, submitted by R. Emerson in 1922 was completed:

- a. Dredging a small section immediately north of Bobolink Wharf.
- b. Dredging section around Azalea point, being the north point of Goats Neck.
- c. Dredging an area opposite Azalea Point, near Bulls Neck, in order to widen the entrance to upper part of harbor.
- d. Dredging an area south of easternmost point of Bulls Neck to facilitate getting into the Narrows.
- e. Dredging an area south of Uncatena Wharf.
- f. Removing the rocks from the Narrows.

The Bobolink Wharf was rebuilt and repaired.

The Uncatena Wharf was repaired.

1926 Ralph E. Forbes had a wharf built and a basin dug for his power boat, the *Sahara*, in the cove southwest of Bobolink Wharf.

1928 Henry S. Forbes requested permission to have a channel dredged in Hadley Cove about 100 ft. wide, extending from the end of his wharf nearly due east, towards the outer harbor.

In view of the fact that dredging was to be done, Malcolm Forbes requested that it be done in four places:

1. To west of Uncatena Wharf.
2. From channel proposed by H. S. F. to J. M. F. boat house in Hadley Cove.
3. The shoal near Frog Rock to be cut back not more than 50 ft.

4. A triangle to the northeast of Uncatena Wharf, to make space for the *Duna* to swing at her new mooring.

1928 At the request of W. Cameron Forbes some rocks were removed from the channel in the Narrows, and on the south side of the Spindle Ledge.

In a letter to W. C. F., J. M. F. noted: "The dredging accomplished in the last two months makes:

- a. A new harbor by opening up Hadley Cove to boats of more than 6 ft. draft.
- b. Enlarges the space for turning and moving boats near Uncatena Wharf.
- c. Widens the north entrance (to the harbor) by the Ledges and deepens the spots for larger boats."

1930 Dredging was carried out at the Upper Wharf, between Cedar and Bobolink Wharves, the approach to the new wharf at Harbor Cottage, and the approach to the new wharf at Newkit.

Permission was given to J. M. F. and R. Emerson to dredge a 6 ft. channel from the Newkit Wharf southwestward into the Third Bridge channel; and an additional channel about 300 ft. long across the bar on the east end of Cedar Island. This was done in order to bring motor boats through the Third Bridge channel from Hadley Harbor into Lackeys Bay at all stages of tide.

At Woods Hole, "Mr. Cahoon is anxious to dredge out the area between our dock and the railway pier, which has silted badly. It seems advisable [R. E. writes] to take the opportunity of dredging out the area on the north side of our own pier at this time. . . . There will be about 700 yds. to come out, am trying to get the consent of Mr Carleton of the Western Union Co. to cooperate with us, as in this way it would be possible to dredge the entire area to present channel near the coal wharf."

For the past 30 years, from 1930 to 1960, there appears to have been no extensive dredging.

Owing to the hurricanes and the natural wear, the piles of rock on the Great Ledge have subsided and are less of a landmark than formerly.

Captain Olsen used to throw a barrel of white paint over the south pile so that it would shine out distinctly at night.

The buoys which were formerly set by us are now set by the Coast Guard and the red spar which was for many years set north of the Ledges has been removed and only the channel south of the Ledges is buoyed and marked on the charts.

Uncatena buoy, which used to be off Uncatena Point has been put much further out, slightly east of north of its former position.

During the times of the hurricanes, following those of 1938, 1944 and

1954, the funds of the Dredging Fund have been used for repairing the wharves, bridges and other shore property which were so extensively damaged.

Thus the legacy of Waldo E. Forbes has been of inestimable value to the Island ever since it was given in 1917.

HURRICANES

1928 Sept. 9. The hurricane which hit Florida on Sept. 6th reached Naushon on the 9th with gale winds and torrential rains. Cellars were flooded and trees were down, 28 on Lackeys Bay Road alone. Except for the uprooting of trees no great damage was done.

1938 Sept. 21. Terribly destructive hurricane hit the Island at extreme high tide. A tidal wave from the Bay carried all Nonamesset bridges out into the Sound. Boat houses were either carried away or wrecked. Pine Island was swept clean of its age-old cedars and all but washed away. Cedar and Fishermans Islands were swept over by the seas.

At the Blue Hills Observatory the wind reached 186 m.p.h.

1944 Sept. 14. The hurricane which we, then at Uncatena, had followed by radio in its devastating course up the coast, hit Naushon with 134 m.p.h. winds. We barricaded the doors and could feel the east parlor window bend in with the force of the gale. The tide came half way up the lawn. All bath houses were destroyed and wharves and bridges damaged but the greatest destruction was to the trees. In many places the woods were flattened down to the ground in tangled masses. The height of the storm was from nine o'clock until midnight.

1954 Aug. 31. "Carol," with winds of 135 m.p.h., struck Naushon at high tide. Shore ponds and swamps were flooded and there was five feet of water in the Uncatena barn. All bridges to Nonamesset were carried away and the Monsod boat house landed upside down in the swamp across the road at the head of Lackeys Bay. The *Winifred*, H. D. Smith's 50 ft. work boat, was stranded across the top of Bobolink Wharf and the *Stormsvala* was swept into Hadley Cove and across the top of H. S. F.'s wharf, but her anchor caught on the wharf and she floated safely to leeward of it.

1954 Sept. 11. "Edna," with winds of almost 100 m.p.h., did some damage to already weakened trees and structures but far less than "Carol", as the tide was low when it hit the Island.

1954 Oct. 16. "Hazel," the third hurricane to strike the islands this autumn, did immense damage to the trees. Clouds of wind-swept spray were

driven right across Naushon. This final blast denuded the forest, already weakened by the previous storms, and actually killed great numbers of trees, especially on the south side of the Island. The forest has never recovered.

1955 Aug. 13. "Connie" did not do much harm at Naushon.

1955 Aug. 19. "Diane," with winds reported at 74 m.p.h., struck the Island hard, also at high tide. Tremendous rain (16 inches reported at Hartford) and heavy seas washed out the beaches and banks along the shores. Cedar Island lost all its cedar trees and Fishermans Island was badly denuded of trees and badly washed away in places.

1960 Sept. "Donna" again washed away the shores. Monsod Wharf and boat house were carried away for the third time.

The *Stormsvala* and other yachts in the harbor went ashore.

The woods, which were just beginning to show signs of recovery from the past hurricanes were again badly battered.

PEST CONTROL

While Naushon has not been afflicted with many pests, yet ticks and mosquitoes are always with us and we have had occasional visitations of Brown Tail and Gypsy Moths, and even a few termites have appeared, I am sure from "off Island."

1909 In 1909 the Superintendent wrote E. W. Forbes, then Island Manager, "Robinson and Reed has been at the moths since two days and it is a very arduous job. Robinson took down from the Cove 49 nests and Reed got 50. You may know that Robinson is not adapted for much climbing (in figure he somewhat resembled King Henry VIII) and neither is Mr. Reed."

E. W. F. to Mr. Robinson

"I told you I thought it would not be necessary for you to work more than 3 or 4 days a week on the Brown Tail Moths. I find it is necessary to send down 2 expert climbers and I should like to have you spend most of your time working with one of them while Reed works with the other. They will be expected to do the climbing. I told you I would give a bounty of 4¢ per dozen for nests. That applied when you and Reed were taking the risks. When you are working with these men no bounty will be given. . . ."

1918-1920 There was considerable infestation with Gypsy Moths and certain regions, especially Nonamesset and Goats Neck, were heavily creosoted.

1907 Mosquito control is first noted in 1907 when the Trustees voted to kerosene and drain the swamp near Capt. Olsen's house.

1915 This same swamp was drained.

1929 It was suggested by H. S. Forbes that an expert be engaged to exterminate the mosquitoes. A contractor, Edwin M. Skinner, did an extensive ditching project, to drain the marshes east of the Bathing Beach Road, the swamp south of the Mansion House and several places along Lackeys Bay on Nonamesset. (I believe that a gang of Russian laborers were employed on this work.)

1931 It was noted that mosquitoes were fewer since the ditching.

1951 Drainage ditches cleared. 36 gallons of kerosene were sprayed on Uncatena, Bulls Neck, Veckatimest and Newkit swamps.

1952 Further spraying was done.

1953 A contractor was employed to drain the old ditches and make new ones.

1954 Drainage of swamps has been successful. Continued effort is needed to keep the ditches open.

1942 Termites were found in the Farm House and some of the other farm buildings, and also in the Pony Pasture House. A survey was made of the Mansion House and Uncatena but no termites were found in either place.

Muirhead & Holway of Duxbury were employed to supervise the repairs and reconstruction necessary.

WOOD TICKS

WOOD TICK EXPERIMENT

1924 H. S. Forbes received permission of the Trustees to carry on an experiment in the extermination of wood ticks, which have been a trial to man and beast through the years.

1924 "The new method of tick control proposed is suggested by Prof. Wolbach, Professor of Pathology at Harvard, who has worked for years on spotted fever (spread only by the bite of an infected wood tick) and is the first authority on the subject. The method is seconded by Dr Richard Strong who offers the services of his best expert in the field.

The plan is to import a small fly-like insect from France, which is parasitic upon the tick. This fly lays its eggs in the tick's body and the larva

destroys the tick. Neither fly nor larva are harmful to other animals, plants, or to man. Prof. Brumpt of Paris, the entymologist who knows most about these flies, will send over one of his best men to work with Dr Strong's man. The two men would have to be quartered on Naushon probably next May or June.

There is one more important point worth mentioning, that is the necessity of careful dipping of horses, deer, sheep or any stock coming to the Island from Wyoming, Montana, Idaho or Texas, for we have two species of ticks on Naushon, both capable of carrying spotted fever." The above letter was written by H. S. F. to the Trustees.

It was voted to grant H. S. F. permission to carry out his experiment.

1926 Results of experiment up to December, 1926:

About 600 tubes of flies with eight to ten flies in each were liberated during the summer. Sites were: Nonamesset, behind the Mansion House, Cedar Wharf and Uncatena.

Successful parasitization in the laboratory was obtained of the two commonest species of Island ticks. Flies hatched successfully from parasitized ticks put out on the Island under natural conditions during the summer.

A rabbit with non-parasitized ticks was placed in a cage at a distance of 50 yds. and another at 100 yds. from the spot where flies were released. Some of the ticks on both rabbits were reached and parasitized by the flies in a few hours, and adult flies were hatched later in the laboratory from these ticks.

Parasitized ticks were liberated on the Island on the bodies of 14 female house mice (*Mus Domesticus*).

In order to see if flies can survive the winter, 34 parasitized tick-nymphs with living fly nymphs within, were planted in various parts of the Island.

Four species of ticks were found on the Island, and there may be a fifth on turkeys. These are: *Dermacentor Variabilis*, *Rhipicephalus Sanguinis*, *Ixodes Scapularis* and *Haemiphysalis Leporipalustris*.

Dr. Larrouse discovered that the field mouse, (*Pennsylvanicus Microtus*), is the natural host of the larvae and nymphs of *Dermacentor Variabilis*.

The natural host of larvae and nymphs of *Exodes Scapularis* is suspected to be the wood mouse. They are seen in early spring on tree stumps, etc., where the wood mice hibernate.

1927 Mar. 20. Live *Ixodiphage* larvae in dead nymphs in wire cages left out all winter at Naushon in hole in the ground.

Oct. Both embryos and adult flies have been found in tick nymphs from rabbits or field mice. Therefore, scientific proof has been secured of the survival of the French Tick Parasite, *Ixodiphage*, over one winter and its successful propagation on Naushon.

Few tick nymphs were obtained from July to Sept., about 60 in all and

three parasites in this number — a ratio of one to twenty ticks. There was a diminution of adult ticks found on animals and people. In July, 1926, 70 to 80 were found on clothes, in July, 1927 only four were found after the same walk.

Whether this was due to parasites is not proven, but seems probable.

On the whole, it looks as if the experiment was a success.

1928 July 6. A great many wood ticks this year but survey shows that there are parts of the Island practically clear of them and in a general way they are more scarce in the regions where the parasite flies were put out. Parasitized nymphs have been found, showing that the parasites have survived a second winter at Naushon.

1929 Sept. 24. Wood ticks have greatly decreased in numbers, especially in the East End where most of the parasite flies were liberated.

1938 There were quantities of field mice and in the following year, 1939, a heavy infestation of ticks.

1940 There are very few ticks, only one or two found on dogs which have been roaming the Island, in contrast with 40 or 50 found a year ago.

1940-1960 The ticks seem to come in cycles, with perhaps six or seven years when they are few in number, and then will come a year when they appear in great numbers.

On the whole, it seems that they are less numerous than in former times.

1977 Dr. Andrew Spielman of the Harvard School of Public Health collected mice, deer and the ticks which they carried. He determined that the common white-footed mouse serves as the reservoir host for the newly identified disease in humans *Babesiosis*: that the Northern deer tick normally starts its life cycle (larval and nymph) on the mouse and in the adult stage is attached to deer. The deer do not carry or transmit the disease. The ticks do, but all stages of the ticks may be found on deer.

Additional notes by Dr. Tom Gregg:

The disease *Babesiosis* is dangerous to those who have had their spleens removed for one reason or another. The bite of a very small deer-tick (*Ixodes dammeni*) may cause Lyme arthritis. A tick bite which produces a centrifugal rash should be seen at once by a doctor, as this disease is caused by a spirochete and is treatable.

Chapter IV

FARMING, TREES, ROADS

FARMING

Those of us who can look back over a period of some sixty years will remember the "golden age" when Naushon was at its peak in luxuriance and beauty.

The primeval forest, chiefly of oak and beech, was thriving, its tall trees making a complete canopy overhead and shading all the woodland roads. The open hills were a grassy pasture land with well defined patches of broom and only an occasional patch of bayberry or huckleberry bushes. One could ride freely through the woods and over the open fields throughout the islands.

The following pages, which describe the farming activities, the improvement of the land and the management of the sheep, will show clearly that these almost ideal conditions were the result of the continuous care of the owners and the farmers who for one hundred years and more had built roads and stone walls, forested the woodlands, planted trees and cultivated the pastures.

In the early years the Island received revenue from the farms; cattle, sheep, poultry and vegetables were sold and wool was the major crop. As time went on and Naushon changed from a farming community to a summer colony with heavy demands for services, farming became of secondary importance and unprofitable. It became evident that in order to be self-supporting, revenues must come from rents and assessments rather than from farm produce.

In recent times two world wars, rising costs, and a series of devastating hurricanes have resulted in curtailment of land improvement and the destruction of the forests. The pastures have grown up to brush; cat briar and Japanese barberry have run rampant and in many regions the big trees have been replaced by a thick, almost impenetrable second growth.

The sheep have always been valuable for their wool, but even more valuable for keeping the pastures open by grazing. It has been questioned as to how much they have accomplished in browsing the undergrowth in the woods and in clearing the fields and pastures, in which they have been seconded by the deer, but it is true that as the flock has diminished in size, the brush has increased to the point where now mechanical means must be used to preserve the character of the Island.

FARMING AND IMPROVEMENT OF THE LAND

(From Farm Records)

1843 Oct. 28. Dug out 40 cart loads from swamp N. W. of Marys Lake. For Hog Pen.

Nov. 14. Dug out 40 cart loads of muck from South Shore hole. Mixed it with ashes & spread on Calf Pasture Meadow, first year no apparent benefit. N. B. A cart load is estimated at 40 bu.

Bought a schooner load (2400 bu.) of leached ashes.

1844 The above ashes were mixed with pond mud from hole near the South Shore marsh, in proportion of 560 bu. to 40 loads mud & put on horse barn meadow; 112 bu., besides the mud, to the acre.

Experiment No. 2: 75 bu. ashes alone.

Experiment No. 3: 15 loads of barnyard manure.

Mansion House Meadow — Ashes & pond mud mixed in above proportions.

Calf Pasture Meadow — The same, no benefit to either.

In the above experiments little benefit from ashes and mud. Stable yard manure proved far the best.

1845 Apr. Thus far this spring we cannot perceive the least benefit to the grass from the ashes . . . whether mixed with mud or alone. Hence we infer that ashes are not wanted on the land at Naushon and we abandon both ashes and mud.

1844 New cellar under the barn was completed & the hogs occupied it. The pipes conveying water into barn from the farm house well were laid 2½ ft. underground; there are five joints of cast iron pipe, each six ft. long. The remainder of the pipe is lead.

67 cart loads of swamp turf were carted from orchard meadow for the hogs to work over — success to them!!!

Aug. 1. Scow built for seaweeding, capacity 8 to 10 tons.

Aug. 17. Sowed second crop of buckwheat on Bridge Lot, first turned under when 1 ft. high, second turned under in October.

1845 Carted on S. W. corner of Nonamesset meadow 160 tons to stack fish with.

23.0 T. 1st day, May 20 — 8 oxen, 2 men carted on new meadow

37.0 T. 2nd day, May 21 — 12 oxen, 3 men carted on new meadow

32.5 T. 3d day, May 22 — 12 oxen, 3 men carted on new meadow

32.5 T. 4th day, May 23 — 2 horses, man and boy (7 loads)

24.0 T. 5th day, May 24 — 8 oxen, 2 men carted on new meadow

May 24/June 27 practically the same. *Total 609 Tons*

1844 Sept. 8. Measured distance round edge of swamp from where they left off digging down to Molasses Pond and found it 3968 ft. = 240 rods.

North West Gutter

Got 1st parcel of eel grass in new scow, about 3 tons

2nd parcel, not quite a load in new scow, about 8 tons

Tried new Ox Rake and found that with a little alteration eel grass can be obtained faster than going after it with the scow — where it can be reached from the shore (men working half a day will improve on this by first pulling the grass & heaping it at low tide, then going with the scow at high water and loading her).

Mud put in cellar from orchard meadow, 67 T.; Scow load in ½ day with rake & oxen & 3 men, 9 T.; Aug. 28, 29, 30 — got loads of rock weed with 2 scows, 11 T.; 18 scrapings of barnyard put in hog cellar, 28 T.; Carted from Jobs Neck eel grass, moss & rock weed, 7 T.

Nov. Carted from barn cellar 183 T. 1st rate manure spread on M. Meadow.

1844 From the experiments tried on this farm the following practical conclusions seem tolerably certain:

1. That farmyard manure & guano, half and half, 10/12 tons or 20/25 cu. yds. of the former to 3 cwt. of the latter will raise a better and heavier crop of potatoes or turnips than full manuring of either by themselves, and at less expense.
2. That land so manured is in as good or indeed better condition for the production of crops than if fully manured with farmyard manure.
3. That Magnesia is necessary for the healthy growth of the potato and must be added in the form of sulphate, carbonate or phosphate if not already in the soil.
4. That most soils, except those near the sea require salt, which greatly improves the crops, increasing the weight of grain.
5. That as phosphoric acid or the phosphates are carried off the land in grain, milk, etc., means should be taken to supply the loss with bone dust, animal charcoal, fish bones or other substances containing phosphoric acid.
6. That from the quick and beneficial effects of bones dissolved in sulphuric acid on crops it seems fair to infer that they require a considerable portion of this acid in a free state, ready at hand to be taken up either by itself or combined with magnesia or soda.
7. That guano or other substances containing much ammoniacal salts should not, in general, be used by themselves without the addition of other matter, as they tend to give a large proportion of soft straw

and high grain in grain crops and large growth of stems and leaves in green crops without producing bulbs in proportion.

32 lb. of sulphuric acid with 64 lb. (8 gal.) of water and the mixture incorporated in a ton of guano will fix the ammonia and it will keep unimpaired for any length of time.

Liquid guano, 11 lb. to 8/10 gal. of water. Mixed with dry earth.

4 cart loads dry earth to 1 cwt. of guano in alternate layers. Let it lie 6 to 8 hours to ferment, then break the lumps and shovel over. Let it remain 6 to 8 hours when it is fit for use.

In moist seasons these dressings, put in a judicious manner on the potato crop in an early stage of growth will not only pay the cost but leave a considerable profit, and when the crop comes up weak, a timely application of them will invigorate the plants and give a fair crop.

It has also been found after four years' experience that potatoes, so dressed, if kept for seed are much less liable to fail in giving a large yield than the same seed from undressed potatoes.

Nitrate of soda and sulphate of ammonia & like substances have been applied to the hay crops for the last four years, upon every description of soil and not in one instance have they been known to fail in giving extra large produce, enabling us to keep more stock through the winter and greatly increasing the latter's feed.

Nitrates & other ammoniacal salts produce large crops for one season but leave the land in very poor condition unless something else be applied.

One cwt. of *animal charcoal* per acre supplies 80 lb. of phosphates which supplies a deficiency in the soil, some kind of phosphates are needed, bones, animal charcoal, fish bones, and shells. . . . What little phosphates our soil has are constantly drawn away in the shape of mutton, cheese, grain, beef, etc. If there is deficiency of barnyard manure it may be supplied by top dressing after the crops are through the ground and they will give a crop as large or larger, and probably more economically than if full quantity of farmyard manure had been applied.

1844 Aug. 19. Commenced getting out pond mud from reservoir on S. side of Nonamesset & carting it over on N. side to stack fish with. 2 teams, a man to each get over 2 loads in 40 minutes & load up again.

Got part of a load of eel grass (5 cart bodies full) for hog yard to stack fish with.

24 loads 1st day — 2 men with 2 carts, 8 oxen

24 " 2nd day — 2 men with 2 carts, 8 oxen

24 " 3d day — 2 men with 2 carts, 8 oxen

18 " 4th day — 1 cart gave out

72 " 5th, 6th & 7th days — 24 loads each day
 " 8th day — none (shoeing oxen)
 144 " 9th to 15th day — 24 loads each day
 16th day — one of the oxen missing

This continues until the 25th day, 658 tons drawn by 52½ days man-labor @ \$1. = \$52.50, 103 days work of 1 pr. oxen @ \$1. per day = \$103.50.

The total 658 tons cost \$156.

1845 Carted on S. W. corner of meadow 160 tons.

| | | |
|--------|--|-----------|
| May 20 | 8 oxen, 2 men began carting on new meadow | 23.0 tons |
| May 21 | 12 oxen, 3 men began carting on new meadow | 32.5 " |
| May 22 | 12 oxen, 3 men began carting on new meadow | 37.0 " |
| May 23 | 2 horses, man and boy | 3.5 " |
| May 24 | 8 oxen and 2 men | 24.0 " |

120.0 tons

5th of May through June 26th, total 609 tons.

1845 Boat *Matilda McLane*, J. M. Barker, Capt.

Caught 1543½ barrels of fish @ 25¢ \$385.87

Caught 689½ barrels of fish @ 30¢ 206.85

\$411.54

Eel grass, Rock weed, etc. put in hog cellar.

3 loads rock weed 12 tons

12 " eel grass 20 "

121 loads mud from long ditch

1846 30 tons rock weed

48 " mud from ditch

52 " eel grass

1847

Hay

During the entire month of July it was good hay weather and nearly the whole crop was obtained dry and of excellent condition.

Cut in the meadows about 127 tons

Cut in pastures 3 tons

Of English Hay 130 tons

Salt Hay 40 tons

Total 170 tons

The above was cut as follows:

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-------|------------------------|-------|
| Mansion House Meadow | 30 T. | Swamp | 2½ T. |
| Horse Barn Meadow | 14 | Uncatena meadow | 18 |
| Lot north of barn | 9 | Uncatena pasture | 2 |
| Lot west of old orchard | 1 | Nonamesset | 12 |
| Lot east of garden | 1 | Nonamesset west meadow | 6 |
| Orchard | 2 | Munsod | 5 |
| Bridge Lot | 2 | Nonamesset pasture | 1 |
| Calf Pasture | 10 | Salt hay | 40 |
| Jim Field | 6 | | |

DITCHING

1844 Aug. 26. Two Irishmen came to work on swamp. Commenced digging ditch around borders of swamp near Jobs Neck, 4 ft. wide at bottom, 6 ft. at top. Expense of cleaning Aug. to Nov. 62 working days, 273 man days, wages \$239.92.

Measured length of ditch from Molasses Pond 5062 ft., cross ditch, 174 ft. Total length 5238 ft.

Sept. Laid trough drain from Molasses Pond to the sea, the bottom of the drain just level with the water, trough descends 6 in. to 1 ft. The end of the swamp ditch, where it enters the pond, is 2 ft. 9 in. deep to surface of water which is 5 in. deep at this time and the water is ½ in. higher than the water in the pond. Water in pond is 12 in. deep in the deepest place. The south end of drain is carried down somewhat below the sea at half tide.

29th. A heavy gale from S. E. and very high tide swept over the beach and filled the pond and backed the water into the ditch so as to fill the lower end of it level with the swamp, fairly testing the sufficiency of the drain, for the next day it had run off within 2 in. as low as it had been before — in 48 hours within 1 in., thus settling the question of draining the swamp. Sunk a 2nd drain from Molasses Pond, 8 in. lower than the first, 80 ft. long, descends ⅛ in. to 1 in. Draws pond nearly dry.

The bushes were cut off in the winter of 1844-45. In the spring this piece was cleared of roots and the sods turned over with bog hoes preparatively to planting. Mr Lake also cut trees & bushes from the N. line of the 2½ acre piece up as far as the cross ditch.

Patrick Furlong commenced working upon that part of the Great Swamp above the acres reclaimed by Mr Lake. He went off having turned over the 3 acres and 119 rods to cross ditch, burned the roots and hummocks in part and got out some of the stumps, but did not finish.

1847 May 31. Pat came again to finish the job with 6 men beside himself and a woman cook. Turfed it over & burned the sods, worked about a month, carrying off the tools. I agreed to cart the stumps & roots for \$40. It took 54 days of men and 30 days of ox work . . . 33 days work was done by our men digging out 188 stumps & leveling the ground. Mr Lake cleared 1 acre, Furlong cleared 3 acres, from above to S. end of Island and each side of Island 5 acres. Whole quantity of swamp cleared. Paid Furlong for contract \$1.25 per acre, total \$673.43.

1859 (note by J. M. F.) Brought on farm level and finding the long ditch filled up to within 18 in. of the surface and much overgrown with dogwood, ivy and bushes . . . determined to dig a short drain through the narrowest part of the ridge S. of swamp about 100 ft. long to salt marsh. We have sanded the meadows and found good results, but part of the meadows show by mosses and water grapes that the drainage is imperfect. Finished about Oct. 1859, 132 days work to which add powder, tools & lumber, total \$132.

1885 Oct. 18. Found box dry, drain inoperative, caused by decay of the cover. Took levels of water in Molasses Pond, swamp being very dry. Water seven inches higher in pond than ordinary high water mark outside, in Vineyard Sound.

Old box drain visible at its lower end, top being some 2 in. below the said high tide mark. Some water oozing out on beach when tide was low beside the old box.

The drain could apparently be replaced at a level some 2 ft. below the old one at moderate cost, and if tide were shut out by a hinged valve the pond would be drained with adjacent swamp.

IMPROVEMENT OF LAND

1844 *Root Crops*, sow the guano broadcast, harrow it well or plough lightly then plant $\frac{1}{2}$ the guano thus applied, the other $\frac{1}{2}$ the first hoeing.

Peruvian Guano, 1 cu. ft. weighs 50 lb. One bu. plaster or gypsum to 100 lb. guano, charcoal, same quantity as gypsum.

1845 *Onkatonka*, commenced preparing the ground for planting 1 acre of long white carrots, 1 acre of potatoes by sowing broadcast Peruvian Guano mixed with loam at rate of 200 cwt. per acre, and ploughing it in 4 in. deep. On 60 rods, guano was mixed with charcoal, 44 lb. per acre. The remainder will be put on when crop is hoed.

A northeast rain storm commenced next morning. The crop of carrots was good, Mr. Lake thought much improved by guano, part of crop was poor.

1846 On Onkatonka Point this spring, planted 10 acres of corn

manured with 500 lb. Ichabod Guano to the acre. The product was estimated 40 bu. corn to the acre. The crop pays for guano and clears the land, which was previously rough, rocky pasture, and labour of cultivation.

Bought 5 tons Ichabod Guano. *Gulnaire's* cargo cost \$125.

Planted corn with small handful of guano in each hill covered over with earth before the corn was dropped.

1847 We raised a 2nd crop of corn on above 10 acres and on 12 acres additional. This spring crop not so good owing to bad season and worms.

1848 (Added) 8 acres on Onkatonka Point, making in all say 30 acres now clear. The first 10 is sowed down to grain this spring. The remaining 20 acres will be planted this year to get it in order for seeding down. We ploughed in 300 tons of manure and put the balance on our 10 acres. Used the balance of guano on corn.

Menhaden June 1 Our boat landed on Onkatonka 81 bbls (stacked for turnips)

June 4 Our boat landed on Onkatonka 87 bbls (part on turnips, part corn)

June 9 Our boat landed on Onkatonka 152 bbls (put on corn)

June 10 Schooner *Boxer* (Nonamesset) 153 bbls and 352 bbls.

Of the above fish those from our seine boat cost 2¢ per bbl. those by *Boxer* from Howlands Ferry cost 16¢ per bbl.

These fish were stacked with mud, 1 bbl. to 1 load of mud & 270 tons of this used on turnip field and swamp. This leaves 324 tons for use next year at Nonamesset. George Randall on 2½ acres, not grass enough to feed a goose, dug it over 12 in. deep, ploughed & harrowed over again, spread ½ his manure (query, how much?) removed stones harrowed twice, other ½ goes on this fall, ploughed the manure in 6 in. deep, sowed 10 bu. corn broadcast on 2½ acres. Fed 28 head cattle 8 weeks on produce, a poor pasture to run over during that time. First 6 cows gave in excess of 11 qts. over previous 6.

HERRING FISHERY

One of the important products of the seaboard was smoked herring and the annual herring run which brought the year's supply was as much of a harvest as any of the other farming or fishing crops.

W. W. S. wrote, "At the Vineyard they pack the fish as soon as caught in hogsheads and strew dry salt among them. Early in the season they put 1 bu. of salt to a hogshead of herrings, 1½ bu. later, not more than ¼ part of it in the lower half of the hogshead and ¾ in the upper half.

They lye in the casks 4 days, are then taken out, smoked, strung on sticks, and are ready for market. Green oak wood is the best fuel to smoke with but they used seaweed, poor hay — anything — should think sawdust good."

WEST END POND HERRINGS

1846 "May 24, Dr. Fisher, E. L. Baker, Mr. Lake and the Governor had a survey of the pond with reference, not so much to its natural beauties, as to its capabilities for prosecuting the herring fishery.

Found the water in it at this time $3\frac{1}{2}$ ft. higher than common high tides in the Bay. Ascertained this with considerable accuracy by means of a spirit level. When up there before a week previous with John Gifford, no water was running out. The heavy rain of yesterday raised the pond 3 inches and quite a little stream was running out to the sea.

We decided that by building an embankment where the fence now crosses the brook we can flood the whole surface of the marsh to the depth of 3 ft. thus increasing the supply of water and also the area of the pond then dig a ditch 3 ft. deep partly across the north edge of the marsh and partly through the upland and under the wall about 100 ft. from its south end and down to the upland and under the wall about 100 ft. from its south end and down to the tide water, with a dam & gate and another dam and gate at the upper end of the ditch near the large pond, the latter sufficiently high to keep the water back and raise it in the pond perhaps 2 ft. We shall have a sufficient supply to last during the herring run. This we shall proceed to do, in the confident hope and expectation that after so judicious an arrangement for their accommodation the herring will manifest a grateful sense of our care for their convenience and comfort by flocking in with a rush.

1847 May 9, Mr. Lake found the water in the pond at the time of operating the gates (Apr. 17) was about 2 ft. higher than last November the dam at the edge of the pond being of loose sods was undermined and broken through the second day after the water was let into the ditch and the pond lowered 10 in. in 40 hours. After this was remedied it lowered 5 in. in two weeks and at this day there is $3\frac{1}{2}$ ft. head.

We find the herrings are in the pond, I think in sufficient numbers to ensure a supply next year. Shall therefore proceed to fix the dam.

May 23d. Stopped the water running out. The pond has lowered since Apr. 17th, 2 ft. and there is now 3 ft. head part of the time. Wilcox let the water run off nights only.

Examined the pond in July, could discover no trace of herrings, old or young.

Aug. 8. Mr. Lake found the rains had raised the pond nearly as high as when it was opened, Apr. 17th. He opened it again and though not a fish was visible, yet in 15 minutes the young herrings (about 3 in. long) commenced running out in great numbers and continued to do so whilst he stayed there. Mr Wilcox went again in the evening and saw them still. Monday morning (18th) none visible. Monday evening they were running in the same abundance but not a single old herring was thus far discovered making for the sea. The supposition is that they deposited their spawn and went out again between the opening of the pond 17th of April and closing it 23d of May. Perhaps they are shy and run out in the night.

1848 April 12th. Opened the pond, no fish appeared, dyke broken.

1849 May 20. Pond closed again, 5 or 6 herrings only have been seen.

1850 Apr. 21. First appearance of herring, about 1000 running on that day, 110 caught, the pond very full this spring, it was opened the first of April, don't think any got up into pond.

May 7th. Up to this date Mr Wilcox had caught about 4000 but from the pressure of the water through the lower gate by the bridge we think but few, if any, herring had gone through. We then opened the upper gate and the rush of water was less violent.

Wilcox stopped catching and the fish began to go into the pond whilst we were there and continued to do so up to the 12th of May.

Ordered him to let them run undisturbed for 4 days longer and to nearly close the gate, days, letting only a small quantity of water run, and open it again at night. After that time he might catch some more.

From 1st of April to 12th of May the gates were open night and day and during that time the pond was lowered $20\frac{1}{2}$ inches in 41 days, which is $\frac{1}{2}$ an inch a day. In 1850 caught about 5000.

1851 Pond very full, caught 3000 fish, water runs too forcibly under gate.

May 13th. Put in breakwaters, want more, to lessen fall."

1857 There is no further definite information concerning the herring although W. W. S. in his lease of the West End House to Joseph R. Luce in 1857 says, "You are to have no right in the cranberry bog and only such right in the herring fishery as may be hereafter agreed upon but are to fit up the outlet to the pond at your own expense and keep it in order until we ascertain if the fishery is likely to do well."

PAVING STONES

1850 At about this date, although in no way related to the herring fishery, appears this letter in the Farm Records:

9th July

"The subscriber on behalf of the City of Providence hereby agrees to purchase all the stone on the shores of Naushon Island suitable for paving, and pay for the same the sum of 25¢ per ton. By all the stone is understood, all that the said city may want.

Vessels are to be sent to collect and take the stone to Providence and an account of the number of tons so taken is to be kept by the City Authorities and forwarded to Mr William W. Swain at the close of each season.

(signed) G. H. Mumford

1851 May 23d. Wrote enquiring if he intended sending for more stone.

W. W. Swain

No record has been found telling how much stone was actually taken to the City of Providence.

N. B. I have always understood that some of the cobble stones that used to pave the streets of New Bedford came from Naushon or Nashawena but have no authority for this other than tradition. — A. F. E.

CRANBERRY CULTURE

1852 Oct. 25. Set out cranberry vines on about half of Nonimissett swamp.

Nov. 2. Set out cranberry vines on other half of Nonimissett swamp.

N. B. There were 10 bushels of vines in 1st lot, 8 in the 2nd lot.

The first parcel covered over half the swamp, supposed to be 1½ acre, the rows are 2 ft. apart and vines 18 in. in the rows.

Cost of vines 50¢ per bu. Also bought 2 bu. cranberries intending to sow them next spring on about ¾ of an acre ploughed on swamp meadow.

N. B. The above vines and berries were obtained through H. G. O. Dunham of Nantucket and produce the round red cranberry, said to be the best kind grown.

1867 Set Oliver Grinnell to work to prepare a bit of the West End cranberry meadow, he to charge \$1.50. He fenced about 100 feet square and took off sod and planted about 30 ft. x 26 ft. = 780 ft. or about 3 rods, charged \$65., besides which we sent carpenter to put new sluice gate in lake, and also sea shore.

Oliver planted his 3 rods with cranberries but not being able to flood them deep the ice pulled them up. He replaced them in the spring but again they were killed. The lake gate was not put low enough.

1870 Last year engaged Mr. Dyer to put up dyke and gate and put on drain pipes. He was also to heap on sand in the enclosure and to flood the pond in November and drain it off, also to set out cranberry plants. He got in the drain pipes, then lost his son and so stopped the rest.

Up to this time the cranberry experiment has cost, say, \$255. Nothing to show for it today but fence and drain and experience and HOPE.

1876 Last winter Brightman piled on sand near Great Pond on a patch about 60 ft. square. Cost of labor and horse about \$30. at which value it would cost about \$400. per acre, which is quite too high. The grass came up through the sand and had to be weeded out. This winter he is trying the experiment of just turning over the sod & than piling on 4 in. of sand, to be carted from S. W. bank of bog about $\frac{1}{4}$ of a mile. He carts about 15 horse loads a day. Suppose cart is 5 ft. long by 4 ft. wide and 1 ft. high it would take 700 loads to cover an acre, 47 days carting @ \$1. for the horse and \$1.50 for the man = \$117.50 for sand alone.

1877 Oct. 7. The experiment at West End of depending on sand dumped on top of grass in bog proves a failure . . . but where sod has been turned over and sand then put on and cranberry plants set, promises better and Brightman is to turn it over and also cut a drain from the little island to carry off the water. This may form the dyke if we conclude to plough it hereafter.

Oct. 20. The above experiment produced for several years good crops, one or two years Henry Cook getting \$100. for his crops.

1879 Oct. 20. Mr. Brightman has made a pretty clean cranberry bed, but no fruit as yet and the crop of the whole bog has been about half a bushel picked by the Brightmans.

Moral: Cranberry culture, like other things, requires constant attention and brain work and it is useless to try to half do it.

1882 Cranberries a failure at West End — a mere waste of money. Perhaps a barrel this year, but hardly.

During the next 25 years no special note is made of work on the land. Hay was cut on the Mansion House meadow and on Nonamesset and Uncatena and salt hay was cut on some of the marshes. We now leave the Farm Record, Vol. 1, from which the above extracts have been taken and come down to modern times and the references to land improvement in the Minutes of the Trustees.

1906 In the spring of 1905 we tried the experiment of inoculating the soil with nitrogenous bacteria discovered by Prof. Geo. F. Moore. The Government sent us free a package of the necessary material.

We planted clover and alfalfa in parts of the Mansion House Meadow, the Jim Field and the Calf Pasture Meadow on patches of the inoculated and uninoculated soil. At first it seemed that the inoculation was going to be a success, but later, either owing to the poorness of the land or bad quality of the inoculating material we found that the experiment was a failure. In the autumn of 1905 and spring of 1906 we continued the work of plowing up and cultivating the soil, principally in the Mansion House Meadow.

1908 The work of cultivating the land has gone on. The Mansion House Meadow having been renovated in the previous years, the Jim Field and Calf Pasture were further enriched. The crop of hay in 1907 was not so good as in the previous year, owing to the drought. The improvement in the Nonamesset Field for pasture, caused by the burning of the grass the year before, still continued.

1909 *Cove Farm.* There are several portions of the Cove Farm which are probably as fertile land as can be found anywhere on the island, with the exception of the Mansion House Meadow and the vegetable garden.

During the last 15 or 20 years little has been done toward keeping up those portions of the Cove Farm which were formerly developed.

It seems to me [Ralph E. Forbes] that it would be desirable to improve the arable land as all the available good land at the East End Farm is incapable of providing adequate fodder for the Island stock. I believe that by keeping a small herd of young stock and dry cows at the Cove, and perhaps encouraging Robinson to keep one or more cows on his own account, and allowing him to sell milk to the passing vessels, and also keeping an additional horse or two and some of the family horses not used during the winter months, a considerable supply of manure would be produced which could be used on the arable fields, and a measurable relief of the East End Farm would be obtained and perhaps a good hay crop.

A little was done on the North Shore section of the cattle pasture, East End, and a fair crop of clover pasturage was obtained there, but no additional work has been done there in the past 2 years. I recommend that we further improve this portion, possibly 25 acres of any fairly open land for the benefit of the cattle.

1910 *Cove Farm.* The plowing and cultivating the Red Gate Meadow at the Cove was successful as far as it went, but Robinson made the area much smaller than we had planned.

1912 We are working to improve the Red Gate Meadow and Creamer

keeps most of the young cattle and dry cows there except in the summer months, when part are kept at Nonamesset.

1910-1944 There is now another long gap, 34 years, in which there is little information about land improvement. After 1928 most records come, not from the Minutes of the Trustees, but from the Annual Reports.

1943-1944 After the last caretaker, Lovell George, left, Amelia Forbes (Thomas) leased the Tarpaulin Cove farm and took charge of the Naushon flock of sheep.

"She is resting certain pastures from the sheep in order to free the pastures from parasites as well as to control the grazing, for the sake of the pastures. Our lessee has put 40 tons of lime on the Lighthouse pasture and clover seed as an experiment in land improvement. The almost unprecedented drought, however, which has existed since April, has greatly handicapped the results."

1950 The condition of the pastures used for horses has been deteriorating. The hillside between Marys Lake and the Mansion House came near losing its sod and washing into the lake. All horses were excluded and a dressing of manure was applied. It now appears that the hillside may be saved.

In the harbor pasture the area of bare sand was rapidly increasing. That, too, received a heavy dressing of manure plus 0-10-10 commercial fertilizer.

The North Pasture also is in very poor condition and suffering from increasing erosion. It is believed that all these pastures would benefit if they could be rested by having fewer horses on them during the winter.

Experiments have been tried in several areas with a view to learning the most economical and effective way to improve our pastures. Various combinations of rock weed were taken from the beaches; lime, commercial fertilizer and manure have been applied in the sheep pen, on the Jim Field, Calf Pasture and on the "airport" on Nonamesset. Apparently these applications have been beneficial and will be continued.

1951 The program has been continued. Lime was spread on the sheep pen and on the hill over Marys Lake and in the North Pasture. The response of the land has been quite striking; in many places it is possible to trace the exact course of the spreader by the rich growth of white clover which has appeared spontaneously where the lime was spread. The exception to this is Nonamesset where no benefit is apparent from the lime.

The areas where rock weed was applied in the pens in 1949 shows an even greater increase in fertility.

It will never be possible to measure in dollars the value of the pasture improvement program, but it seems evident that the size, quality and productivity of our sheep is directly dependent upon the amount and quality of

feed we provide, and it is more economical to supply feed in the form of natural pasture than by the importation of feed.

1952 The Dept. of Agriculture sent a group to the Island last summer to make soil tests, and recommendations for the improvement of our pastures. Four areas were selected and several soil samples collected from each.

1. A fairly level and accessible area between Mt. Surat and Mt. Surat Point was chosen to represent soil not previously treated and typical of most of the Island.
2. The Mansion House Meadow, to represent cultivated land that has been treated with lime recently.
3. Jim Field which was formerly cultivated, but less, recently.
4. Nonamesset Field which we wish to improve as pasture during the breeding season, for the main flock. It had a token treatment with lime in 1950.

1952 Mr. Robert Lucey, a member of the group, made recommendations, summarized as follows:

1. Below Mt. Surat, *Could* be brought into production, but would be impracticable to attempt. It should be classified as non-agricultural land. The soil will not hold sufficient moisture to maintain a productive pasture.
2. Mansion House Meadow and Jim Field now contain adequate lime. Recommend application of 8-16-16 commercial fertilizer at rate of 500 lb. per acre.
3. Cultivation impracticable unless grazing is prevented.
4. Nonamesset — Additional lime at the rate of 2½ tons per acre, and plant smooth Brome Grass, 8 lb. alfalfa, 4 lb. red clover, 2 lb. Landino clover per acre and nurse crop of oats to be grazed off in May.

The results at Nonamesset should be observed before major program is undertaken.

Chart in 1952 Annual Report, p. 10.

The application of lime on Nonamesset has been done and a small area at Mt. Surat has been limed, to determine how beneficial it will be.

The program of liming the sheep pens both inside and on adjoining areas and the North Pasture has been continued. The fertility of the areas where rock weed was applied continues in sharp contrast to soil not so treated.

1953 Two years ago an impressive growth of clover was observed in areas where lime had been applied. After this encouraging result the program of spreading lime was continued but results in 1952 and 1953 have been less significant, and at Mt. Surat no benefit is apparent.

The spread of broom over ever-increasing areas threatens to impair access to the West End. In certain regions, the end of the growth cycle may have occurred.

W. Cameron Forbes is providing the services of two men and a mechanical brush cutter to fight the broom. The plan is to prevent the broom from spreading by destroying all plants on the east and south sides of the areas of main concentration. Then, as the old plants reach the end of their life cycle, to attack the new growth. It is planned to use a brush-killing spray to supplement the work, but spray is too expensive to use over large areas. The mechanical brush cutter provides a very rapid means of opening the roads invaded by broom.

1954 The plan for controlling the broom was modified following the discovery that a weak solution of Estron (1½%), in water, kills broom and substantial areas may be treated at moderate cost. The brush cutter has been used for clearing roads for the Jeep carrying tanks and spraying apparatus.

A comparatively smooth area of fertile land at the west end of Uncatena has been cleared of brush and cat briar and has been fertilized and seeded.

Fertilizing of the heavily grazed horse pastures and sheep pens and the Nonamesset farm area has been continued. In addition to the use of the available manure, 10 tons of 8-16-16 commercial fertilizer and 21 tons of lime have been applied to 100 acres, including the Mansion House Meadow, Jim Field and Calf Pasture.

A new grass has been developed at the West End called "Tall Wheat Grass."

A trial shipment of 21 lb. has been presented to Naushon by Mr. Turner, President of the Lincoln Land Company.

A great deal of cat briar has been killed by Estron. Poison Ivy is killed in the same manner and heavy masses of it have been destroyed.

1955 Considerable areas of broom have died, partly from spraying and partly from its natural cycle.

Spraying of poison ivy and cat briar has continued, the latter being resistant to spray.

1957 Broom again sprayed during the past year, much work being devoted to young growth, which threatened to take over areas previously sprayed.

In the late autumn a Government-sponsored pasture program was started following the recommendations of the Federal Soil Conservation personnel. This involved application of 100 tons of lime and will also require eight tons of commercial fertilizer (8-16-16), and 100 lbs. of seed on 32 acres, partly on Nonamesset, partly on Uncatena, and the rest on selected locations on Naushon.

Early in the spring we burned the north end of Uncatena as an experi-

ment in controlling the cat briar, poison ivy and high brush which had taken over the area.

1958 Spraying of broom has been continued. A great deal of young broom is starting over considerable areas and continued spraying will be necessary to hold the present gains.

The pasture improvement program, which was shared by the U. S. Dept. of Agriculture, was not conspicuously successful because of the severe drought of last spring and summer.

The burning of the north end of Uncatena, which was done in April of 1957, does not appear to have controlled the poison ivy which continues to grow there profusely.

TREES AND TREE PLANTING

Dr. Monardus, in his book, "Joyful News out of the New Found World," written in 1574, is thus quoted by Hakluyt, "It may be three yeares paste that I had knowledge of this tree, and a Frenchman that had bene in those partes shewed me a pece of yt, and tolde me marvellis of the vertues thereof, and howe many and variable diseases were healed with the water which was made of it . . . and that the Indians did shewe them this tree, and the manner howe they should use yt, etc. so they did and were healed of many evils; which surely bringeth admiration that one onely remedy should worke so valuable and marvelous effects. The name of this tree, as the Indiyans terme yt, is called Pauame and the Frenchmen called it Sassafras."

1602 One of the objects of the voyage of Bartholomew Gosnold was to obtain sassafras, and from the accounts of his ship's company we have the first accounts of the woods on the Elizabeth Islands. John Brereton writes: "On the outside of this Island are many plane places of grass, abundance of strawberries and other berries. . . . In mid May we did sow in this Island (for a trial) in sundry places, wheat, barley, oats and pease, which in fourteen days were sprung up nine inches and more. The soil is fat and lusty, the upper crust of grey color; but a foot or less in depth, of the colour of our hemplands in England.

This Island is full of high timbered oaks, their leaves thrice as broad as ours, cedars, straight and tall; beech, elm, holly, walnut trees in abundance, the fruit as big as ours as appeared by those we found under the trees, which had lain all the year ungathered; hazel nut trees, cherry trees the leaf, bark and bigness not differing from ours in England, but the stalk beareth the blossoms or fruit at the end thereof, like a cluster of grapes, forty or fifty in a bunch; sassafras trees, great and planty all the Island over, a tree of high

price and profit; also divers other fruit trees, some of them with strange barks of an orange colour, in feeling soft and smoothe like velvet."

1603 Capt. Martin Pring reports: "[They] sail around the Cape [Cod], anchor on the south side in $41^{\circ} 25'$ where they land in another bay and excellent harbor. . . . July, the bark goes homeward laden with sassafras and arrives safe."

Among the most valued of all trees were the great swamp white cedars, which together with Chestnut and Walnut trees are mentioned in the old deeds and agreements with the tenants and the Indians, as being reserved for the owner.

1700 Matthew Mayhew wrote to Wait Winthrop: "Sr. you may please to call to mind you promised to let me have Cedrs for inclosing my field, out of swamps at Nashawna, but John Weeks will expect your license. . . . The strip we want is hardly of value on sd. Island being generally poles, so as to load a boat we suppose about 1000 and accounting rayles made out of trees not fit for timber or clapboards. I must request yr. hon^r. to advertise sd. wood being an hopeful winter for seasonable cold and my son will endeavor to have sd. wood when yr. Hon^r. may please to direct therein."

1718 Thomas Lechmere wrote to John Winthrop, F.R.S.: "I am satisfied his (Weeks) design is not good, more accounts are told me concerning his carrying Cedars to Nantucket whereupon I wrote him and told him it would not be allowed, and directed him to desist therefrom, as likewise killing of deer, which I hope will meet with your approbation."

1802 James Bowdoin was deeply interested in tree planting. In 1802 he wrote to the farmer Baalis Bullard: "Carry also upon the horses you may lead a number of twigs of the Lombardy Poplar trees and put them deep into the ground around the field at Paul and Zephenia's; desire Mr Robinson to set out all the Locust trees he may have."

1805 He wrote to his nephew, Thomas L. Winthrop, "I omitted another circumstance respecting ye improvement of ye Island, which applies to all plains of light lands especially, whch. is that to bring them into a good state of cultivation the enclosures sh'd be lined or surrounded with trees to intercept the high winds. I wish, therefore, as fast as ye new walls shall be completed that trees may be planted by the sides of them, and that 3 or 4 small enclosures be made in different parts of ye Island in which should be planted Locust trees, with a quantity of ye seed, to be kept in nurseries for this purpose. I would not depend on these alone, as ye beech nuts and oak acorns should be planted along such walls and a furrow made by a plough on each side of ye walls. A brush fence might be made to answer for a few years until ye young trees should get out of reach of ye cattle. Mr Bullard must

encourage as much as possible ye growth of wood upon ye skirts of ye Island, to shelter it as much as possible from ye high sea winds.

Mrs Bowdoin is about procuring plans for a small house for a few months residence in summer. As she is a great lover of fruit, particularly peaches and cherries, she prays that a garden may be enclosed near the house, and a few trees set out in it. If we don't live to eat the fruit it will answer for those who may take our place."

This prophecy was fulfilled, for while James Bowdoin and his wife did not live to enjoy the trees which they planned and planted, the later owners reaped the benefit, and continued in the work of foresting and reforesting the Island.

The following extracts are from Farm Records, Vol. 1:

Larch, Locust and Fir Trees

1844 April, a lot of young larch trees imported from England, costing about 2¢ each, were set out in the lot next west of old orchard — also some firs, ground being first well ploughed & manured with well rotted scrapings from the barnyard. A quantity of locust and larch seed were also sowed.

Nearly all the larch lived and looked finely, but a long continued drought has apparently killed about $\frac{1}{4}$ of the number and all but 15 or 20 of the firs. None of the larch seed sowed here or in Milton came up. The locust came up finely and appear to be doing well, wherever sown. Another piece of land in the woods near the Jim Field was ploughed up and a few larches and firs sett out. Every one of the former are living and a few of the latter.

On the Desert 15 larches and a few firs were sett out in the sand — the former all living — the latter, dead. Some Highland Fir seed sown here which is coming up.

Beach and dog grass sett out here — former, living. In another place on the Desert 50 yellow pine trees, procured near New Bedford, were sett out and all died.

Thus far, all experiments result in favor of larch and locust trees for the Island soil, especially in the sandy parts. Those few sett out in sand, every one lived notwithstanding the dry weather.

July 24th. Sowed some locust seed on Desert in both enclosures where the larches were sett out and also among the dead pine trees — rained the next day and a few days after.

Aug. 6. Found the locust seeds up.

N. B. These were sowed so late they came to nothing.

1845 March. Copy of bill, Pinus Maritimus from Bordeaux sent by J. Winslow.

| | |
|--|---------|
| Cost of a hectolitre of seed at Bordeaux | Fr. .25 |
| Cost of barrel | 2.50 |

| | |
|---|------|
| Carriage on board <i>Hermit</i> | 1.75 |
| Postage of five letters | 3.50 |
| Freight fr. Bordeaux, cartage etc. from Havre | 5.60 |

Fr. 38.35

N. B. A hectolitre is 3 bu., M. Guestin sowed 300 hect. on 600 acres.

April. Sowed the above parcel of seed on about 6 acres of land in the Desert, land slightly ploughed, seed harrowed and bushed in. At the same time sowed a parcel of our yellow pine seed on 96 rods and a few larch seed on 16 rods.

May 25th. Examined the different enclosures on the Desert where the *Pinus Maritimus* was sowed in April and found the seed coming up thickly in all the enclosures.

1846 The pine seeds sowed as above *came up* well, but we find a large proportion dead this spring, those on the clear sand all dead, where there is some soil they do better.

Invoice of 8 casks of pine seeds shipped by Mr Winslow to Grinnell, Minturn & Co. for W. W. Swain, New Bedford.

| | |
|--|---------------------------------|
| 1926.50 Killograms @ 48 francs per Killogram | 924.72 |
| discount for cash | 27.72 |
| | <hr/> |
| | Fr. 897. |
| Total expenses Fr. 1010. | Cost of seed brt. down \$194.24 |
| Fr. 5¼ to the \$ 192.37 | Charges in France 73.01 |
| | <hr/> |
| | Total expense \$267.25 |

1846 May 12/13. Planted pine seeds all over Eagle Hollow in hills 4 ft. apart, 2 to 3 seeds in a hill, a small job. From what we observe the sheep and deer don't touch the young pines, hope they won't take a fancy to them!

N. B. This was a failure, field mice or other depredators destroyed all the seed. The S. W. enclosure was sowed over again in May with seed of the last importation and it came up well.

1851 April, Abiatha Wilbur set out 6000 white pine trees on the Desert, for which he is to be paid by agreement 2½¢ each for such as are alive and healthy one year from date; the Island to pay the passages of himself and men off and on and to furnish one man to help set them out, he boarding him and his men without charge.

June 17th. Received from W. W. Swain (1852) \$5. in full for the above and 3 fowls and some maple trees, the pines all dead.

1858 Nov. 2. During last week Mr Lake planted about an acre of

Beach Grass on the west sand patch. It took 6 men and 1 yoke of oxen one day to pull and plant it. The directions are to plant 6 or 8 inches deep, 18 in. apart, fall said to be the best time.

1859 In the spring planted another acre or so of beach grass. Both patches, after a very dry summer, now look very well and make this experiment the most promising we have tried for recovering sand, although the broom looks wonderfully well since it has been enclosed and leads me to hope that this may be valuable where we can afford to fence.

Nov. 20. Mr Lake has been planting beach grass for several days, in the Desert. All the sides of the Main Road are planted and the greater part of the great sand patch south of the Main Road.

1860 Oct. 4. Beach grass perfectly successful, especially that planted in the autumn. Ordered more.

1861 Oct. 14. All beach grass looks well. Ordered patch of sand by the French Watering Place planted this fall, also two patches north and south of road near the Gap in the Wall, also patch near Sunset Hill, east end north shore, also new patch south of Main Road in the Desert.

1859 In the spring enclosed somewhere between 25 and 50 acres from the Yellow Gate Wall westerly, just north of the roadway including all the sandy part north of the road, and also a good deal of fair soil. Used oak posts and strips of hemlock and yellow pine, the hemlock 1½ in. x 5 in., and the yellow pine 1 in. stuff.

Sowed chiefly with American Pitch Pine seed, also Austria Pine and Scotch Fir, some Larch and Norway Pine seed, some Savin or Red Cedar berries and some Norway Maples.

Also 40 or 50 lb. Scotch Broom in the sand.

The Pitch Pine came up well in sand and many plants are now alive.

In spite of very dry August and September also plenty of young broom.

In the grass land no results although we planted in various ways — chiefly broadcast, but also in small *cuts* made with corner of shovel or hoe. Must next try a seed sower set very shallow.

Mr Fay's experiment shows that many trees come up the second year.

The old broom within the enclosure much improved by shutting out the sheep.

1860 Oct. 14. Leaving today. We planted this spring a full supply of Pine seed in *little holes* just turning the sod. About 1 in 5 now have plants, chiefly Pitch Pine. Our foreign seeds have not taken well. A few of last years seedling were alive this spring in the open sand, but none seen lately — probably scorched by the sun. Broom spreads finely.

1861 Oct. The Pines show everywhere except in the deep grassy

bottoms. They do best on hills with northerly exposure; some of the largest are on bare sand. If equally successful next year I must extend the fence to the mid-Desert Wall and plant 200 acres of the highest ridge of hills north of the road.

In the sand near road are 2 white pines 2 to 3 ft. high.

1862 Oct. 5. Coming down in July we found bad accounts of the deer's doings. Our *large* pines nibbled down but many small ones showing up. A few days since, I set small flags on all groups of pines & made up my mind that every *hundred yards square* had a good group on it—some 1 ft. high, many in clear sand.

Mr Lake thinks that as many have come up of those sown broadcast as those in holes. The great test will be this winter's deer work. If not too discouraging I propose to plant from a line drawn from the N. W. corner of Pine Yard to the Middle Wall—about $\frac{1}{2}$ way from gate to North Shore, and let them grow and take chance 2 or 3 years before I run a fence there.

The broom and beach grass continue promising. Mr Fay's trees of first growth are now 5 ft. to 10 ft. high and many have grown 18 in. this year. His later fields look no better than ours. No signs of any but American Pitch Pines.

1863 Oct. 9. Pines look well. Some few 3 ft. high. Deer nibbled those near East End somewhat but did not touch the larger ones near south corner. Have now planted seeds each year.

1864 Oct. 22. The thinning process at West End succeeds well. Ordered more [thinning] on road, also to get wood by thinning and picking out poor trees. Pine Garden shows plenty of pines everywhere except in deep valleys. A few 20 or 30 ft. oaks. Some pines 3 ft. high. Beach grass successful.

Grapes and Peach trees in Pear Orchard generally failed.

1866 Oct. 12. When I came here in May the pines seemed ruined by the sheep nibbling—hardly a green one visible, but in August I found lots of green ones. My belief now is that each year more have been nibbled than I knew of and I am now going to put higher fencing in spots and try to keep the sheep out this winter.

Since we took more care to fence out sheep & since the pines have been growing so extraordinarily the sheep who get in do not nibble them down.

The pines have gained finely and with the broom make a great feature in the Desert, especially this year after a dry season and later, rain.

We are about fencing in some 50 acres south of the Main Road which has become necessary from the encroaching sand. We mean to plant it with broom and pines.

The field west of Marys Lake, which I remember chiefly bushes has now

grown into beautiful pasture oaks, well scattered and park like, and is becoming the prettiest wood lot on the Island.

North shore old cut places hardly recover.

1868 Oct. 15. The pines look *very well* having been better fenced & got a start. The broom has suffered, either from hard winter or worms, but there is plenty of it left. A yellow worm on broom was plenty in July, also on pines and whortleberries.

The thinning on the West End Road is a decided success and I am trying to thin out about half of what is left.

This fall I have been marking a notch through from the South Piazza to the salt marsh opening where the swamp drain goes out. This gives 70 large trees to cut, estimated about $17\frac{1}{2}$ cords, or half our supply. We propose to mark balance between Peaked Rock openings and old wall.

1871 Oct. 19. Last year and this, have opened up a beautiful vista south of Mansion House taking in a point of the small Island (Bachelors). We are now planning to extend pinery south about 50 to 100 acres and plant broom and pines there.

We ought to plant north side of Colt Pasture where sand is coming in and blowing badly, but John Gifford asks too much to justify it this year.

1874 Oct. 21. We extended the Pine Garden in winter of 1871-72 south of Main Road about 75 acres and planted broom seed and American Yellow Pine seed. The old broom which had been kept down by the sheep made a great show in the new yard and a good many small pines of 1873 show. Broom and pines in the old Pine Garden are doing finely.

I have this year marked for culling about 100 old trees on Main Road between Grapevine Walk and Yellow Gate, and about 100 more from Red Gate (at Trotting Course) along Ridge Road as far as Amphitheatre Path, including 100 yds. or so on said path — also including some on the south ridge of the valley where Robert's grave stands.

1876 Have marked largely at Abrahams Bosom with an O in red paint on trees that are to stand & ordered that all trees within 10 ft. be cut, except maples, nut trees and tupelos.

1877 Have enclosed with wire fence patch near long pond, north shore, to plant broom and pine. Have ordered 4 lb. broom seed planted on Great Weepectet and intend adding some pine seed.

1879 No signs of either broom or pine in patches enclosed. A year ago we threw open the Pine Garden north of the pond, including the south side. The broom, south, has done very well but no signs of pines there. Our thinning system at the West End shows good results.

1881 Have marked from the Gap in the Wall to Cottage [Lot], opening O trees to stand on both sides of the road, cutting all within 12 ft., say, on south side 730 trees, on north side 330, estimated at 135 cords.

Oct. 31. Packing up to go. Am now putting up fence around south Pine Garden, that, around north, removed 3 or 4 years ago. The spruce fence made in 1871 has been useless against sheep for two years, and not a pine of the few that came up, is visible, though a few locusts and beeches show, and much good broom. New fence has 1 barb wire at top, 5 steel wires. Mr Cameron thinks the wire fence will keep out sheep for 5 years without much labor. We have much good broom and some gorse.

We have been making paths for use in shooting birds through north Pine Yard chiefly by pulling up the dead broom which in 20 years has reached the end of its life.

1884 Nov. 2. A very wet year, the old broom not fenced, north of the road has suffered much but the old pines look well. The south Pine Yard is full of new broom, the sheep having been kept out, but few pines show up.

The contrast between unfenced broom and that fenced in is wonderful and we find also new grasses coming in, while on the north shores of the Island sand and moss are spreading . . . and we decide to fence in or wall in all the north shore between Yellow Gate Wall and Gap in the Wall fence, and to plant it with pine and broom.

We have it planted in pine and broom and fallowed to extent of 200 or 300 acres as a barrier to sand and lichens, and also as a game preserve with broom seed and pine cones for feed for quail and partridges, and intend adding other trees, first in the Pine and then in the New Yard so that in 1904 my successors may find an evergreen barrier there against the sand and the north and west winds.

1885 Summary of large new operations; this spring was completed the new stone wall from Yellow Gate Wall to new wire fence west of it and thence from west end of wire fence — which enclosed South Pine Garden & has been perfected — to the Middle or Lock Gate Wall. This was built by contract with S. H. Reed, J. H. Lambert & B. F. Mayhew of Marthas Vineyard. It was well done and the wire fence, south, made sheep proof. The same builders have contracted to build a similar wall from Middle Wall west to Gap in the Wall, in both cases they gathering the stones. They have so far given great satisfaction in promptness and quality of work.

In these two enclosures we propose to plant Scotch Broom, Dwarf Broom, Hardy Pines, either New England Pitch or Scotch Pine and Larch, Oak, Beech, Locust and as many fruit-bearing shrubs for bird food as possible.

Tract thus enclosed will be about 375 acres and the object is to make a preserve for quail and other birds and also to shelter the north side of the

Island where sand is blowing and where, from over-feeding or other causes the land has become impoverished and is yearly growing worse, sand and moss coming in.

The pines are intended, with some help of larches and from existing bushes and from the stone walls themselves, to prove nurses for deciduous trees.

NAUSHON WOODS

1875 J. M. F. wrote the following notes in "Farm Records," Vol. 1:

"Trying to recollect exactly how the woodland looked in 1833 when I first came here, it occurs to me that 40 years hence somebody may like to see a record of how it is now (1875) — for it would be a help today if we had even rough notes of 1833.

Then (1833)

The Main Road was nearly bare of trees on the south side up to Joshuas Bottom.

The Trotting Course was an open field with a few scattered oaks, I think 10 or 12 ft. high, so that you could see from Red Gate to Grapevine Path.

At the West End from the Gap in the Wall to the Cottage Lot and beyond was chiefly a thicket of young beech and oak.

The Buck Islands had high wood — since cut.

Today (1875)

There are only a few Savins on Onkatonka.

Nonamessett from the wall to bridge has high wood south of road, and young growing wood north except thin strip of old wood, saved in 1850 to 1855 in the cutting.

The Buck Islands were cut in 1850 to 1855 under a theory of saving the wood and are now a thicket of growing wood about 20 years old which has not been thinned except partially on West Buck Island and promises in 20 years more to become forest.

Rattlesnake Neck has some patches of fine old woods.

Goats Neck where old Capt. Smith has his shanty has, perhaps, the best growth of wood on the Island, much of it free from undergrowth — the great old oak there, the largest and finest on the Island, we have named after our War Governor, J. A. Andrew. It measures 10 ft. around.

Joshuas Bottom is well wooded with many fine old trees on its Trotting Course end.

Starting from the Mansion House by Main Road, the side west of pond and south of road is filled with fine Pasture Oaks & some beeches. North of the road the wood is older and gradually yielding on its northwest edge to

the encroachment of the wind which kills the old trees, but more or less jungle of beech and scrub oak is creeping up to form a new forest — *perhaps* south of Trotting Course — the wood around Great Swamp being comparatively sheltered, is in good order. We are thinning out the over-ripe dead top trees for fuel, leaving the thrifty ones.

The Trotting Course still has open spots in it. So has the pasture south of the lake, and also *Deer Hill* — the table land on north side of road opposite Trotting Course — but all these old pastures are chiefly filled with fine Pasture Oaks & Beeches.

West of the first main wall is almost all forest to within 150 yds. of the Bay, or perhaps 200 yds. at the wall, widening out as you approach Eagle Hollow.

On the South Shore is a similar open space with glades open near Peaked Rock, but pasture oaks are quite a feature south of Main Road.

West of Eagle Hollow the woods along the North Shore are mostly old, and then too on the north side the exposed old trees are dying and the question arises will the low brush grow up and again form forest at the north?

I omitted to say that in the midst of the North Shore woods west of the first wall are large open spaces and dells where the brush is thick in many spots under the shelter of which many fine Pasture Oaks and some Beeches have grown — from one hill there the Bay is seen. Similar spaces occur in the North Shore woods west of Eagle Hollow.

West of second main wall (Yellow Gate Wall) are no trees except the old beeches called Beech Orchard & an occasional pasture oak with dells and one or two swamps where a few trees exist.

Right west of this wall is our Pine Plantation of about 100 acres.

From third or Middle Wall west we find a few Tupelos and other trees in small swamps north of the road. South of road, east of Middle Wall a fine show of beech, oak, cedar and tupelos on and around Luce's swamp on east side of Tarpaulin Cove and west of Middle Wall.

North of the road and the Cove Swamp near the Gap in the Wall the woods show some good trees and just west of the Middle Wall some swamp trees are creeping near the Sound.

West of the fourth Wall woods extend from 200 yds. of North Shore nearly up to the Cove, with spaces of sprouts.

On this end of the Island on the 1500 acres cut by order of the Legislature under Gen. Salem Town, under pretense of saving it for the minor heirs, it is said that it resulted in a debt of \$1,500 besides destroying 1500 acres of splendid old wood.

In 1833 I recollect this tract — except some old wood at the Cove, as all low sprouts clear up to the beech woods and Black Woods near the Pond; much of it, especially near the Bay and Sound is still Sprout Land, but in the

middle of the Island it is beginning to be a low wood with occasional fine trees . . . giving hopes of renewal of the forest.

Along the ridge from the Cove to the Black Woods seems to have been left a strip of the original forest now chiefly fine old oaks and beeches. I have, along the wood road, tried . . . thinning out the beech saplings and sprouts around any good oaks and I mean to extend this plan; there are beautiful beech dells there now and on the South Shore above the French Watering Place, and west of it are many fine trees and openings from the Black Woods south.

The Black Woods and beech woods are fine bodies of wood with many old trees which we gradually thin for fuel.

Rams Head is covered with sprouts.

West of the fifth or Deer Hill Wall no wood except Deer Hill in the middle and Maple Swamp on the north, but clumps S. W. of Deer Hill are growing up into fine trees.

Among the large trees are the following: Gov. Andrew Oak, 10 ft. circumference, an oak in west end of woods just south of Peaked Rock, 13 ft. 8 in., and has one limb with 43 ft. spread, a beech in dell just N. E. of Yellow Gate 10 ft. 6 in., and has one limb 70 ft. spread, Giant Holly Tree 18 ft. in diameter just west of old cottage."

We have been cutting a gap N. E. of Mansion House to recover the Inner Harbor, also a gap S. E. opening out the extreme south end of West Buck Island, also a gap south of house opening view of Lackeys Bay.

1882 They have made quite a show in thinning along the Gap in the Wall Road to the north end of Painted Path, and some on the Cove Road. I have marked some 80 trees with O with a limit of 12 ft. to be cleared around each.

N. B. If (the farmer) succeeds in selling freely I shall next year easily mark enough for 500 cords — the thinning of which will improve the woods left."

TREE PLANTING

Barnstable, Oct. 14, 1885

J. M. Forbes

Dear Sir:

After looking over the territory which you desire to clothe with forest trees, I will say that the conditions are favorable, and in some respects more so, for raising evergreen trees at first, and finally deciduous, as the land on Cape Cod on which such trees have been planted and have grown to good size.

The exposure of yours to the winds from the sea is no worse, and your soil with a little exception is *infinitely* better for planting than that of a large portion of Cape Cod, from the fact that our soil is so very light and porous our trees are liable to die the first year after being planted.

From the nature of your soil I judge that could you get the seed to germinate the trees would be sure to grow and you would get a sufficient stand of evergreen trees with hardly enough hills missing to fill in with deciduous. You have a little broken land where the sand is moved by the winds that it would not be well to plant until something is done to stop the sand from blowing about. If you cover these spaces with brush from your forests — and it will add to the beauty and not injure the growth to remove it — you will find that the sand will at once stop moving, and if you desire to plant any grass to cover, the "poverty grass" I pointed out is the best thing I know of. I prefer it in such spots to the "beach grass".

It would be well not to plant these spaces with pine seed until the brush had lain on them a year. I should plant pine seedlings. If the seedlings were on your territory and could be immediately planted you could reasonably expect to have the larger portion live and grow, but to be taken from abroad, you would be liable to lose very many.

I would advise to plant the N. E. Pitch Pine and the Scotch Pine. I should your seed and zeal will permit, the entire length of your enclosure *the very next spring* always leaving a few rods from the shore the hollows and valleys for open spaces or the planting of deciduous trees.

I would advise to plant the N. E. Pitch Pine and the Scotch Pine. I should plant close to the shore and on the tops of the hills and ridges where most exposed to the winds as near as 4 ft. apart each way, that they might protect each other. As soon as you get further away from the shore, on the sides of the hills where less exposed, 5 ft., 6 ft. or 7 ft. away would be near enough to plant. I would advise that you wait till you get 2 or 3 years' growth on the pines before putting in the nut or acorns among the pines, and plant them where the pines are missing. Try planting on the sharp declivities amongst the rocks where there is little surface material.

Instruct your planters to be particular in planting seed to dig off 2 or 3 inches of sod, certainly 6 in. in diameter, loosing the subsoil slightly, dropping say 3 seeds in each hill and pressing with the foot or hoe. I have found that when seeds or seedlings were in a cavity they were somewhat protected at first from winds or sun and more lived and grew than when planted on a flat surface. I am satisfied that more failures in planting tree seeds result from imperfect seed than from the depredations of mice, squirrels or birds.

I find that the White Spruce (*Abies Alba*) is perfectly hardy on the sea coast, and while making a beautiful pyramid the lower branches retain their vigor and foliage longer than any other variety of the spruces. This, together

with the Red Cedar would flourish on your rocky hillsides. I shall take pleasure in obtaining seeds of the N. E. Pine this autumn and sending them to your farmer before spring. In a few years you will point to the acres you have redeemed from desolation to the beauty of verdure, covered with trees sending up their spires to heaven, a monument to your energy and perseverance.

John Kenrick P. O. South Orleans

South Orleans

Oct. 27, 1885

Dear Mr Forbes:

I quite agree with you that it would be best on all accounts for you to get pine seedlings from Falmouth, rather than at this distance, if you will transplant. I feel that you should generally plant the seed rather than to transplant the seedlings — even from Falmouth.

Transplant *limitedly* next spring, as an experiment. I expect that you will plant with the hoe from seed at cost of \$1. an acre, including seed.

Get what *fresh, perfect* seed of the Pitch and Scotch Pines you think you will want next spring and have it planted as soon as the frost is out.

The cones must be picked *at once*, as they will begin to open the first dry Norther, and kept in a dry, cool place, not put in boxes or barrels, until a few weeks; then if placed in slightly warm room in the winter, or placed out in the sun [on] dry days the cones will open, when the seed can be shaken out, then rub off the wing attached, winnow, and the seed is ready to plant. The seed after it drops from cones must be kept from mice.

I hoped to get your seeds of the Pitch Pine here, but cones are exceedingly scarce. Shall get all I can and send to Mr Cameron in season with full instructions.

I hope your men are collecting beechnuts and acorns. Don't know but you can buy them cheaper. Get some and have Cameron put them in barrels or boxes as I have suggested being sure that the sand is thoroughly mixed with nuts and acorns. You will find it best that the beechnuts are in a thing by themselves as they are so small you will not like it if they are with the other nuts.

You can get perfect chestnuts in Boston, if particular to select the bright yellow ones.

I am getting to feel some responsibility for your tree planting and may assume something like a dictatorial manner. Do not hesitate to write on any point.

Gray says "Poverty Grass" is species *Aristida*, variety *Aristida Dichotoma*. Thoreau in his *Cape Cod* describes it fully. It is transplanted very easily by taking small sods from where it is thick and not needed as protection.

You are having delightful weather for improvements. I am taking advantage of it by having a gang of men clearing a swamp for cranberries.

John Kenrick

Pine Garden

1886 "In brief, we finished the stone wall in June, of about 2 miles between Yellow Gate Wall and the Cove Woods Wall besides starting some deer-proof nurseries of pine, oak and other seeds. Have put out in Sept. 1885 and May and Sept. 1886:

| | |
|------------------------------------|------------------------|
| about 10,000 seedlings, Scotch Fir | |
| " 30,000 | " American Yellow Pine |
| " 100 | " Savin Red Cedar |
| " 150 | " White Pine |
| " 2,500 | " Alanthus |
| " 1,250 | " White Birch |
| " 30 | " Willow |
| " 2,150 | " Maple |
| " 3,000 | " Catalpa |
| " 600 | " Spruce |
| " 500 | " Barberry |
| " 1,650 | " Larch |
| " 500 | " Box Elder |
| <hr/> | |
| Total | 52,430 |

1890 The Pine Garden Wall is in very good order and nearly sheep-proof except about and under the gates, where they creep in more or less. The pines do not make much show but there are many thrifty ones alive and a great show of alanthus in the valleys along the North Shore. Some of the alanthus trees are now 12 to 15 ft. high and a great many 6 to 8 ft.

The catalpas look fairly well, but not so vigorous as the alanthus.

The larch, savin cedars and some other pines still live but don't make much show yet, but when I recollect the slow growth of the old pine grove, started between 1845 and 1850, I have strong hopes of seeing good clumps growing up along the best places in the Plantation, if we can keep the sheep out a few years longer.

The broom is spreading everywhere and *may* in time take too full possession of the whole 500 acres, but when this danger comes the trees may be out of reach of the sheep, and we can turn in the flock and thus keep the broom down.

The birds, chiefly quail, increase so slowly that we think the feed must be short. We hope broom seed may help, and are to try barberries suggested by E. C. Cabot as having succeeded as quail food about the Bussy Institute, and we are to plant a lot in the spring of 1891.

Up to this time, the marked success of the enclosures has been in broom of both varieties and in alanthus. Hopes are good for heather, for yellow pine and for catalpa, and some share of other evergreens with a few beeches, maples, birches and oaks, but these do not catch the eye much.

1891 Oct. The pines are sadly nibbled by deer. The alanthus trees are still growing fast. Catalpas doing well, in spots. Savins do well. The maples, locusts, oaks and beeches get on very slowly. The pines which were too small in 1871 to be seen without creeping about on hands and knees, are now 15 to 20 ft. high.

We have thinned the deer this year and have got the land within the wall nearly sheep-proof. The broom is filling up the enclosure splendidly. Gorse makes some little progress and the heather shrubs are doing well.

1892 I still hope and believe that with time and patience we may see groups of Scotch Pines push up when the area of pines, now small, outgrows and outflanks the attacks of deer and sheep [and that] we shall see reasonable pine groves rise even from our present stock.

For deciduous trees the alanthus and birch are today the most promising and are doing well.

Broom extends even *too rapidly* over the 500 acres of our North Shore Enclosure."

This ends the earlier reports of tree culture during the lifetime of J. M. F. We now turn to the accounts in the Annual Reports of the Trustees and other 20th century sources, what may be considered the modern era.

1907 The old cedar tree near Cedar Wharf has been walled up. Owing to washing away of the bank below it, its life was in peril. (In 1960 it is still alive although diminished in size and spread).

A new deer-proof fence was put around the Apple Orchard and some young apple trees planted.

1918 Mrs. J. Malcolm Forbes recommended that shade trees be planted near the Nonamesset House. The old grove of locusts are getting more and more wind-blown and many of the trees are dying.

1923 Mrs. W. H. Forbes contributed for tree surgery for the preservation of certain trees.

TREE CULTURE

1928 A tree expert from H. L. Frost & Co. was employed to trim dead wood from the Sentinel Tree and to take what measures are necessary to preserve its life; also to cut dead wood from a number of the more important trees including the two great Sassafrasses and other named trees.

In September a heavy gale uprooted many trees throughout the Island.

1931 W. Cameron Forbes called attention to the tupelos in the swamp to the west of the Gap in the Wall. He asked permission of the Trustees to cut a few trees east of the wall to give a view of the swamp from the road, which request was granted.

1936 *Tree Competition.* During the summer a competition was held, the prizes to go to the young person who found the most unusual or extraordinary tree on the Island. There were 18 entrants. Through the kindness of William S. Forbes of the Forbes Lithograph Co., photographs were taken, bound in albums and given to the competitors. There are 25 trees represented.

1938 There was great destruction of woodland in the hurricane of September 21.

1944 September 14. The Island was again struck by a hurricane from the southeast which destroyed large tracts of forest, especially on the south side of the Islands.

1945 The gale in June, which blew for nearly 30 hours, carried clouds of spray and has done untold damage to the trees which were just newly leafed out and great numbers of them were killed.

Observing that no broom grew in the woods it was suggested that by planting pine trees in parts of the Desert the broom might be controlled.

W. C. F. purchased 20,000 red pine trees, on the advice of Mr. Cherry, the State Forester. About 15,000 of these were set out in the spring in three areas:

1. Broom enclosure south of Bowdoin Road.
2. South of Plantagenet Road and north of wall.
3. South of Hilltop Road in valley just east of Pershing Grove.

1948 When Prof. Raup, Mr. Rathbun and Mr. Henry Hosmer made a survey of the woods in 1945 they pointed out the dearth of young trees, except for beech sprouts, and suggested that the deer and sheep eat all the new growth. Following their suggestions the Trustees appointed a Committee which, during the past winter, built a small deer-proof enclosure in Glen Elvo and planted experimentally several species which occur naturally on the mainland, but are absent on Naushon. These were: white pine, white spruce, hemlock, white ash, mountain ash, hackberry, linden, sugar maple, and a

blight-resistant strain of chestnut. Control plantations of the same species just outside the enclosure will be tried to see if they will be eaten.

1949 The above planting, to which should be added the honey locust, are doing well.

A large area north of the Newkit house has been planted by Copley Amory, Jr. with more than 100 native and exotic species and varieties, which should be of use in connection with the general reforestation program for the Island.

1951 In Sept. 1950 and April 1951 trees from above mentioned nurseries were transplanted with wire protection to locations along the Main Road, Ridge Road and other places. In addition, a small nursery has been established in the old Apple Orchard just below the Ridge House with a view to supplying a source of trees for planting in the vicinity of the houses or elsewhere.

1951 The following were planted: pine hemlock, chestnut, white ash, rock maple, linden, yellow birch, Chinese Scholar tree, and Goldenrain tree.

Among the trees that have already been set out in cages from the older nurseries are the first five species above, and white cedar, elm, poplar, sycamore, honey locust and spruce.

1952 A number of young trees have been transplanted from the above nurseries to various locations. The junction of the Gov. Andrew Path with Hughes Path is marked by a hemlock, and other trees planted where they may become landmarks.

All of this work has been done by family and friends, the Trustees providing only the Jeep for transportation.

1953 The forestry program has continued. There is again a maple tree at the north end of Maple Tree Path. Two Meta-Sequoia, obtained from the Arnold Arboretum, have been planted—one on the Mansion House Meadow and the other near the shore of Marys Lake.

It is not expected that these plantings will reforest the Island. The purpose is to provide a wide variety of seed trees for the future and to counteract the tendency for the forest to grow up exclusively to beech.

1955 It appears that most of the trees in exposed locations, including those around the harbor, were killed by the hurricane of Aug. 31, 1954.

1956 Most of the hemlock which had been planted in sheltered locations in the woods have done well, several having reached the height of 4 or 5 ft. All were destroyed by the deer, the cages knocked down and trees killed.

Based on experience, a more extensive program is planned, (tree planting) concentrated in the more frequented areas and among the houses, the purpose being to restore the shade and shelter.

1957 A vigorous tree planting program has been undertaken. A number of trees have been moved from the Island nurseries or obtained elsewhere, and have been planted in the farmyard area and about the houses where the shade will be welcome.

In addition, an area of several acres west of Marys Lake has been fenced with a deer-proof fence. This area will be planted with those trees that promise to do well.

A fence has been built around the southeast end of Bulls Neck to preserve the trees which have been planted there.

1958 A number of the recently set out trees were killed by the drought of last summer, so that it will be some time before the results of the planting begin to show. As more of the old trees die of storm, salt and old age, the need for more young trees becomes more apparent each year.

The enclosure west of Marys Lake is completed and planting has begun. A pump and water line from Marys Lake have been installed, the cost being paid by individuals.

The area formerly occupied by the farm vegetable garden has become increasingly offensive in appearance. A considerable effort has been made to plant trees in places where they will hide the dump, oil barrels, coal yard and power plant.

Other planting about the farm buildings is intended to give shade, shelter and a little privacy.

FRUIT TREES AND VINES

1845 Strawberry vines: A Robsons, Hoveys seedlings, Wilmots Superb.

1846/7 Old pear trees in new orchard grafted with Bartlett.

1847 Sent on peach trees.

1848 Sent on 8 peach trees (2 Davis, rare, and 6 old rare).

Apple tree north of wall grafted with "Northern Spy".

Pears grafted on thorne stocks:

1st and 2nd trees on north side of road down to wharf — Bartlett

3d, 4th and 5th trees on north side of road down to wharf — Burre Bosc

1st tree on south side of road down to wharf — D. Seedling

2nd tree on south side of road down to wharf — Burre d'Aremberg

3d tree on south side of road down to wharf — St. Ghirlain

4th tree on south side of road down to wharf — Burre de Beaumont

2 East trees — Andrew Pear

Trees were grafted with Winter Nelis, Bartlett, Louise Bonne de Jersey, and Burre Deil.

1850 Dwarf pear trees on quince stocks set out from Crapo's nursery.

1865 Renewed vineyard fence and planted in April:

| | |
|----------------------------|----------------------------|
| 6 Delaware Grapes @ \$1.50 | 4 Concord Grapes @ \$.50 |
| 2 Rogers Grapes @ 1.50 | 4 Duncan Grapes @ 1.00 |
| 9 Rogers Grapes @ 2.00 | 3 Crevelling Grapes @ 1.00 |
| 4 Rogers #17 Grapes @ 1.50 | 5 Rogers #15 Grapes @ 2.00 |
| 4 Allens Grapes @ 1.00 | In all 35 vines cost \$51. |
| 3 Adirondack Grapes @ 9.00 | plus freight and labor. |

I think the same year set out 6 peach trees, now bearing a little. A year or so later increased size of vineyard and got more grapes.

About 3 years ago Dr Fisher sent me 50 peach trees from Middleboro which we planted with care, putting forest soil around them. They look healthy but, although blossoming well, produced only 2 or 3 peaches.

1870 The Rogers (grapes) alone have come to any good with a few Concords, *nearly all mildew*. Last year we ate a few and this year we shall get, perhaps, a bushel of Rogers and some Concords.

Pears bear pretty well but some trees were ill chosen for grafting.

1871 Our Rogers #15 produced some nice fruit, although much of the crop mildewed and cold September was not favorable. We fear there is not enough heat, usually, for grapes.

1873 Very dry times proved favorable for grapes and we had plenty in vineyard and one house, Delawares, Rogers Hybrids and Concords.

A few nice peaches, perhaps a basket, and fair show of pears but loads of peaches withered & pears need regrafting.

1875 Had several dishes of most delicious peaches, also some good Rogers grapes and some good pears. From South Piazza plenty of delicious grapes which I had supposed, Delaware, but W. H. F. insists are Diana.

1877 Quite a supply of fine peaches. Grapes are coming with some promise of a crop. Have ordered 20 ft. high fence on 2 sides of studio intending to try to espalier peaches there with 1 or 2 plum and standard peach trees.

1882 Had a few fine peaches last year — not one this year. A few grapes. The grapes along the South Piazza gave a few Rogers seedlings. Those along old wall did absolutely nothing.

NAMED TREES

It has been a custom, instituted by Governor Swain and John M. Forbes, to name certain trees, some few for their marked character or location, but by far the greater number for Island friends or for notable persons who have actually set foot on Naushon.

It has been arranged, when possible, that the person for whom the tree is named shall be present at its dedication and this was true of all five Presidents in whose honor trees have been named: President Grant on his visit on Aug. 29th, 1874, President Cleveland when taking part in the deer hunt on Oct. 9th, 1894, President Taft when staying at the Stone House on Oct. 12th, 1912, President Coolidge while on a three-day visit at the Mansion House, July 26th to 29th, 1929 and President Osmena of the Philippines in 1944.

On his memorable one-day visit, Crown Prince Akihito of Japan turned the first spadeful for the tree planted in his honor on Sept. 20th, 1953.

At simple but deeply felt ceremonies, trees were named for the following Generals: Civil War — Grant, Sherman and Sheridan; World War I — Pershing, Harbord, Summerall, Liggett, Bullard, Dickman and Drum; World War II — George C. Marshall.

Lord Forbes, 22nd Baron of Scotland and Lady Forbes had trees dedicated to them in August, 1948 and after the death of Lord Forbes his son, Nigel, and his wife stayed at the Mansion House with W. Cameron Forbes in July, 1956 and at this time two of the large beeches on Sheridan Path were named in honor of the present Lord and Lady Forbes.

The following is a list, doubtless incomplete, of the named trees. It may be noted that the naming of a tree has been a somewhat ceremonial act by the Island Governor and any trees that have been privately named by others are not here mentioned.

Gosnold Oak — Large ancient oak north of Cove Junction Road, about $\frac{3}{4}$ mile west of the Cove.

Sentinel Tree — Ancient cedar on south side of South Shore Road, as it leaves woods, about $\frac{1}{2}$ mile west of Molasses Pond.

Giant Dwarf — Large spreading oak in dell just west of Sentinel Tree.

Holly Tree — Old Holly growing beside Holly Rock just south of west end of Crescent Beach.

Lunch Tree — (West End) On south side of South Main Road at junction with Deer Hill Road.

Stanton Oak — Usual site of Hunt Lunches. On north side of Eagle Hollow Road just west of its junction with Main Road.

Gov. J. A. Andrew Tree — On Goats Neck. "The largest and finest oak on the Island, it measures 10 ft. round". (J. M. F.)

- W. W. Swain Tree — At Trotting Course Gate, on north side of start of Governors Walk.
- W. H. Hathaway Tree — On Hathaway Path.
- J. M. F. and S. S. F. Tree — Oak on west side of Hathaway Path near western end.
- R. W. Emerson Tree — big Sassafras at west end of Governors Walk.
- E. H. Hallowell Tree — At north end of Hallowell Path.
- Sheridan Oak — At east end of Sheridan Path, on north side.
- Sherman Oak — On north side of Sheridan Path near its western end.
- R. B. F. and Sisters — On Hathaway Path.
- T. S. Hathaway Tree — On Hathaway Path.
- N. H. Stone Tree — On Hathaway Path.
- Frank S. Watson Tree — On Hathaway Path.
- Edith E. Forbes Tree — Near W. H. Hathaway Oak, southeast of Hathaway Path.
- General U. S. Grant and Mrs. Grant — Two oaks on Amphitheatre Path.
- President and Mrs. Grover Cleveland — Two oaks on south side, western end of Governors Walk.
- Oliver Eldridge Tree — On eastern end of Sheridan Path.
- Edward M. Cary Tree — At south end of Cary Path.
- R. L. Dabney Tree — named for Roxanna L. Dabney on Cary Path.
- Judge Hoar Tree —
- Senator Hoar Tree —
- Samuel Cabot Oak — South of Bathing Beach Road, west of Calf Pasture, west wall.
- E. C. Stedman Tree — named for Ellery Stedman, J. M. F.'s doctor and friend.
- J. S. Perkins Tree —
- William A. Hale Tree — On Hale Path.
- W. N. Swift Tree — named for Dr. William N. Swift, cousin of S. S. F.
- E. M. Stone Tree — named for Elizabeth M. Stone, mother of Nathaniel H. Stone, north of Commodore's Path.
- William S. Thayer Tree —
- President and Mrs. Taft — Two oaks in Trotting Course about 500 yds. east of gate.
- President and Mrs. Coolidge — Two oaks on south side of Governors Walk at its western end.
- Colonel Charles Russell Lowell Tree — Oak on Hathaway Path.
- Colonel Robert Gould Shaw Tree — Large beech in hollow on Hathaway Path.
- G. S. J. Oliver Tree (1875) — "Giant holly on south side of Main Road just beyond old cottage ruins. It measures 48 in. around butt and is about 35 ft. high."

- General John J. Pershing Tree (1919) — in Generals Hollow. This was struck by lightning and another young oak planted by General Pershing.
- General Harbord Oak (1919) — in Generals Hollow.
- General Summerall (1919) — in Generals Hollow.
- General Liggett (1919) — in Generals Hollow.
- General Bullard (1919) — in Generals Hollow.
- General Dickman (1919) — in Generals Hollow.
- General Drum (1919) — in Generals Hollow.
- Governor Wright Tree (1919) — in Generals Hollow.
- President Osmena Tree — on south side of Governors Walk, east of Rye Field.
- Lord & Lady Forbes — Two sassafras trees on opposite sides of Sassafras Path just south of R. W. Emerson Tree.
- Lord and Lady Forbes — Two beeches opposite one another on Sheridan Path.
- Crown Prince Akihito of Japan — Willow west of Mansion House planted by him.
- General of the Army, George Catlett Marshall, was present at dedication of oak in his honor, Aug. 11, 1951.
- Note:* A great majority of the trees mentioned above have long since gone and in many cases no trace of them remains.

WOOD CUTTING

1602 Wood cutting on the Elizabeth Islands was carried on by Bartholomew Gosnold, as one of the objects of his voyage was to obtain a cargo of sassafras which was reputed to have great healing powers. He also gathered a large amount of cedar.

Sir Walter Raleigh writing from "Weymouth this 21st August [1602]" says, "And whereas sarsephrase was worth 10 s. and 20 s. per pound before Captain Gilbert returned his cloying of the market will overthrow all myne, and his own also. . . . There was also brought 26 sedar trees by Gilbert. . . . If my Lord will vouchsafe to C. Harris to seaze them we will part them in three parts, to seale cabineates, and make bords and many other delicate things."

1700 One hundred years later Matthew Mayhew requested cedar poles of Wait Winthrop, about 1000 from "Nashana" for enclosing his field on Marthas Vineyard.

1718 Thomas Lechmere complains that John Weeks is selling cedar to Nantucket.

Except for timber rights mentioned in numerous deeds, and rights for

cutting granted to various tenants there is no special mention of wood cutting until Revolutionary times.

1776 Petition of Thomas Jones, Commissary: ". . . Your petitioner being appointed by the Court there as Commissary to supply sd. forces with barracks to live in as well as other necessities, humbly begs leave to suggest to the Court the necessity of building some cheap shelters for about 70 or 80 men on the Island of Naushaun."

"The said Commissary, be and hereby is directed with the assistance of the soldiers on said station, to build as many log houses with timber on said Island as will be sufficient for the reception of 70 or 80 men, and . . . is further directed to procure nails and boards sufficient to build cabbins and cover roofs of said houses."

Signed J. Warren

1805 James Bowdoin writes from Paris to his nephew, Thomas L. Winthrop:

"I omitted to mention to you concerning the timber at Naushon, that it would be best to have it cut and sold, with all ye necessary precautions to procure ye sale of ye good and bad together; that ye trees be so cut as to make ye greatest quantity of timber. . . . It is ye old decaying timber which ought to be first cut & ye residue left for future growth."

1819 In 1811 James Bowdoin died. Some eight years later his heir, James Temple Bowdoin, then in England, sent a request to the Court that a large quantity of timber on the Island be cut and sold. The Court appointed Messrs Winthrop and Sullivan, Commissioners to represent Bowdoin and to take action. They appointed General Salem Town* of Charlton, Massachusetts to undertake the project, and wrote him a long letter of instructions. After much hesitation General Town agreed to undertake the supervision of this large lumbering operation. On March 13, 1824 he signed a bond of \$10,000. that he would fulfill the contract made with Winthrop and Sullivan.

A large packet of letters of Salem Town concerning his work at Naushon was given to me (A. F. E.) by one of his descendants in about 1946 and from these, extracts will be given to show some of his difficulties and those of his employee, Walter Woodard.

Salem Town to T. L. Winthrop and Wm. Sullivan, Bowdoin Trustees

Charlton, Jan. 15, 1824

Dear Sir:

After bestowing much reflection on the subject, I will give you my opinion of the course proper to be pursued in the present season in cutting the wood

* In some papers the name is spelled Towne.

and timber on Naushon Island, and I confess I do it with extreme diffidence because there are many important considerations that cannot be ascertained only by experiment, such as, what quantity can a man cut per month, what can he be hired for, what will be the price for board, what distance is the wood to be drawn, can a vessel lay so near the shore in any place, either on the Bay or Sound side that the wood can be drawn to the nearest water's edge, etc. etc.

If the work was to be done in Charlton I could readily answer the first enquiry, but the wood is much more solid and harder there [Naushon] than back from the salt water, but . . . I will proceed to redeem my promise, for no time is to be lost if you would commence cutting in February, which I think advisable.

I would in the first place . . . have a plan taken of the wood lot, then divided by marked trees into lots of about 50 acres each making two tiers of lots so that each lot would be bound on the water at one end, and when that was taken make arrangements for board, as the Cove House is the only one at which the men could conveniently board. If the occupant would not board reasonable I would have erected a temporary building for their accomodation in the woods, which I have no doubt would be the best course if all the wood and timber was to be cut.

I would then hire 20 men for 3 months and 10 for 8 months, let them chop 3 months then the feed would be such that the oxen would cut their own fodder (with a little grain if worked hard).

I would commence drawing with 5 carts, one waggon and 10 yoke of oxen.

My reason for 4 yoke of oxen more than the carts are that the land being uneven would many times require 4 yoke on one cart & as it would be expensive wintering them there and they be subject to be island sick the second year, I would keep them in such flesh that they would answer to kill in the fall & in that way the expense for them would be lessened very much though they might not sell in the fall for as much as they would in the summer.

The 4 surplus men would be profitably employed in loading wood and piling up at the shore and occasionally perhaps in getting it on board a vessel.

It might be well to continue the 10 best men through the season chopping (the old wood) — the forgoing calculation upon the supposition that about 3000 cords are to be cut next spring.

As it respects getting the wood to market it probably would be done cheapest by some of the wood coasters of Maine, but little calculation can be made until you ascertain where it is to be carried, and that cannot be determined until you get some of the wood to markets and the quality of the wood generally known.

Finally, I would mark those trees that would afford valuable ship timber, and let them remain standing.

I say nothing of the season best for cutting as there is so much dead & decaying wood that the number of men here named may be employed 1 year without cutting one tree that would ever sprout, and the Agent must be able to determine when and where to cut.

You require me to give in writing the terms on which I would superintend the cutting and sale of wood and timber. So strongly am I impressed its responsibility that I have been almost prepared to shrink from engaging in it. If my views be correct my terms for the days actually employed for one year, including all my expenses would be () per day.

1824

Charlton, Feb. 16, 1824

Gilbert Lindley

Dear Sir

The very liberal wages I have engaged to pay you as foreman will warrant me in giving you some trouble before your time of services commences. You observed there were some wood men might be hired near you, if so you will be authorized to hire 3 or 4 at \$10. per month for from 6 to 12 months. A reasonable time only will be allowed to get there & they must be prudent in keeping their expenses down, which I expect to pay. They must start to be at New Bedford the 17th of March with you,

Yours in Haste Salem Town

Gen. Town

Sir, I have sent you a man by the name of (Beriah) Austin who is wishing for work. If you and he can agree on the hire I think he will suit well as he is steady, a likely man and a good workman with an ax.

From Yours Gilbert Lindley

Winthrop and Sullivan to Salem Town

"We have concluded it would be best to erect a house suitable for lodging and boarding the wood cutters at work under your direction at Naushon.

The average travel of the men is now 3 miles a day. It is important to save as far as possible by the erection of a cheap tenement as near as practicable to the center of the business. As the building is designed for temporary use its cost should not exceed what is necessary to fit it for its particular purpose, winter and summer. Three hundred dollars probably would cover the whole expense. You will therefore please to cause a house to be built, and have it suitably furnished. A man and his wife to be employed to keep the house under your direction, or take the men to board, as you may find most economical."

E. Swift, Falmouth, to Gen. Town

"Agreeable to your request I have taken a partial view of the timber on Naushon Island. I find there is a tract of the best timber land I have seen in this part of the country, say, timber suitable for ships, from 300 to 400 tons,

and a good chance to get a quantity of knees; and long, straight timber that will cut from 25 to 35 feet in length and from 8 in. to 12 in. thick. The timber is white oak and yellow bark oak."

E. Swift

Winthrop and Sullivan to Salem Town, May 19.

"We have concluded that you shall remit all monies received by you for the sale of timber, to us — retaining nothing for expenses, but for these you should draw on us from time to time — and you will please to govern yourself accordingly.

Have made several inquiries respecting the price of ship timber; for small timber here (Boston) the price delivered is from \$6. to \$10., if large, from \$10. to \$24. per ton. The navy agent for this district is purchasing timber of all dimensions and I am of the opinion that it is adviseable to delay making any contracts until you can have an interview with him."

Dear Sir,

I enclose an engagement on the part of Mr Winthrop and myself to pay you the compensation for your services agreeable to your proposals.

Y^r Obt. Serv't.

R. Sullivan

1824 Salem Town to his nephew, Augustus Rider

"I want you should try every way to send 2 or 3 cargoes of good wood to this place (Boston), to N. B. Curtis even if you have to pay some more. Do take unwearied pains to send some, even if you can't do better than \$2. per cord. I have just written to David Nye at Wareham that he might have 50 tons of ship timber @ \$5. per ton, he finding the carpenters and broad ax men. . . .

Our friends are all well. . . . Dr Phillips says Mrs Town must take some strong horehaound tea, I have got some in my trunk, she must also take Paragorick freely, a teaspoonful at a time.

In great haste Salem Town

Gen. Salem Town

Naushon Island, Aug. 4, 1825

Sir, Wee hant heard nothing from you since you left the Island. I should like to know how all your family dos and if you ant coming soon i want you to wright to me with aut fail. We air all well here on the Island at this time.

So here is my good lov to you Salem Town."

(On the outside of this letter is sealing wax, and in red ink, written where the stamp should be: "18¾" the address, "Salem Town in Charlton worcester County massachusetts state i wish this letter to go with speed.")

From Farm Records, Vol. 1.

1845 Feb. and March. Woods drawn from Great Swamp, 29 cords, cost \$5. to cut.

1854/5 Cut wood on East Buck Island except a portion north of the road. It was sold standing to Sanford Herrendeen, Woods Hole @ \$4. per cord for merchantable and \$2. for refuse; 61 merchantable, 28 refuse, 8 walnut.

1855 Sold Mr Herrendeen the wood on north side of road on Nonamesset, leaving strip 80 to 100 ft. wide along the road its entire length and cutting all smooth thence to north shore. What ship timber is wanted by John Webster and all the walnut wood, is reserved from this sale. Survey made, 385 cords.

1902 William A. Hale to Edward W. Forbes

Nov. 14. "Probably 50 cords (of firewood) this winter will round up all traces of the gale of 1898, and the dead and dying trees that have fallen since, as well. After this winter, by judicious selection, live trees can be so taken where growing too thickly, as to improve the natural looks of the forest. Forty cords a year taken from the woods east of the Yellow Gate Wall would never be noticed, except gradually for the improvement of the surviving timber.

The dying pines in the Happy Valley should be cut down and removed either by burning in piles or using for wood or for covering sand blows or for some such use. As soon as they are gone the broom will probably clothe the ground and hide any stumps, logs or brush that may be left."

1917 It was voted that a certain number of trees be cut for telephone poles and that lessees of East Pasture be allowed to cut trees for opening up views, without authorization from the Trustees.

1919 Chairman reported that 1 man has been working for 3 months, cutting trees on East and West Buck Islands.

1926 Chairman reported that arrangements have been made for the sale of wood now being cleared out and cut up, at \$8. per cord on the Naushon wharf, which is about \$1.50 more a cord than the cost of cutting and hauling from the East End woods.

1928 The wood account showed a loss of \$610. owing to the cost of clearing unsaleable wood.



HURRICANE TIMBER PROJECT

1944 On the evening and night of Sept. 14, 1944 a storm of hurricane velocity struck the Island from the southeast. It destroyed a material portion of the forest, although destruction was markedly erratic and spotty.

By far the biggest problem presented by the hurricane was the disposition of the fallen timber, estimated in the vicinity of 30,000 trees, perhaps 1/5 of the total. This encumbered both roads and forest.

Among considerations in clearing the forest were the control of livestock, reduction of the fire hazard and the creation of conditions for a new, healthy growth. Several forestry and lumber experts were brought down to explore the possibilities of processing, removing and marketing fallen or damaged timber. The prospect was discouraging. Owing to war conditions labor was scarce or nil, necessary equipment impossible to obtain, costs almost prohibitive.

Finally your Chairman (W. C. F.) discussed the situation with Mr G. L. Tobey of Brockton, a lumber contractor, who showed interest in processing the timber for chips to be delivered to Bird & Son of Phillipsdale, R. I.

A contract was made between the Trustees and Mr Tobey, and another contract with Mr Luis Notarantonio of Providence whereby the latter delivers the lumber into barges and boats supplied by the Trustees for transportation to Woods Hole. N. then unloads the wood, transports it to a chipping mill erected by the Trustees at Phillipsdale, where it is processed by Mr Tobey, some of it going into lumber and some into chips for Bird & Son.

1947 The chipping mill was established at Phillipsdale, the lease of the land on which the mill was originally situated was terminated and the mill moved to a tract owned by Bird & Son. The mill has been enlarged and the volume of its operations increased and showing a profit. All of the common stock is owned by the Trustees. While processing the mainland lumber was profitable, the expenses involved in dealing with Naushon timber made treatment of Island timber unprofitable.

The Trustees authorized Raymond Emerson to make an agreement with the Woods Hole contractor, H. D. Smith, to set up a sawmill on Grapevine Path, Naushon. Smith has sawed up about 330,000 ft. of lumber, 90% of which is oak. He has cleared large tracts east of Green Gate Wall, west of the Mansion House along South Shore Road, near Pony Pasture House and on Goats Neck.

1948 H. D. Smith sawed over 200,000 board feet, chiefly oak, most of which remains unsold. He will probably sell it for 6¢ or 7¢ per board foot which is one half the usual price of oak.

Chipping mill at Phillipsdale is no longer using Naushon wood as this was processed at a loss. It continues with mainland wood.

1950 Many trees are still dying as result of the hurricane of 1944.

1955 Again the Island was devastated, this time by three hurricanes, with resulting very heavy damage to the forest.

It seems that it will take many years for the woodland to be restored to its former size and beauty.

ROADS

Roads must have been built for strictly utilitarian purposes by the first white settlers who brought with them teams of horses and oxen.

In the early days travel by sea was far easier than travel by land but even so, there was undoubtedly a road the length of the Island in the 1680s.

Wait Winthrop tells of raising horses on Naushon, and so by the 18th century there were probably a few driving roads and saddle paths.

Henry H. Crapo, in his map of 1840, first traces the roads and gives their names. He laid out the Trotting Course in 1833 for Governor Swain and this, the Grapevine Walk, White Gate Path and Sunset Path retain the same names as at present.

According to Crapo:

Main Road same as present Bowdoin Road up to the Cove, thence west by Red Gate Meadow and straight west to the Cottage lot, then north of the West End Pond, skirting its west shore south to the present South Main Road and on to the West End.

Ridge Road, from Farm House to South Shore Bathing Beach.

South Shore Road, same as present Ridge Road.

West End Road, from Yellow Gate north and west following present Bowdoin Road, through Gap in the Wall, then running due west, then south of the West End Pond and on to the West End.

Bowdoin Way, from Cottage Lot to Rams Head.

Shrubbery Walk, from Nonamesset Road just west of middle wall, to Newkit.

There is also shown a road branching south from Main Road to Hollow Farm, approximately the course of Deer Hill Road.

There were in early days no roads along either the North or South Shore.

The Nonamesset and Uncatena bridges were not built until 1828 but the houses were there long before that and there must have been roads with fords across the channels, useable only at low tide.

There were roads to all cultivated fields such as the Rye Field.

After the 1870s there is an increasing number of records of the planning and building of roads for pleasure use.

The location of most of the roads can be found on the accompanying map.



1877 Willard Besse finished carriage road from Molasses Pond along the South Shore to the Sentinel Tree. This year we have begun a new road from the Beech Orchard through Witches Glen to Grinnell Wood Path.

1879 Last year we completed South Cliff Road (later called Billiard Table Road because, in order to induce S. S. F. to drive over it, J. M. F. described it "as smooth as a billiard table"). Have also made a road along the North Shore called North Cliff Road which reaches Mt. Cary (named for Edward M. Cary who carried it here for the view), and turning south near Round Pond joins the Main Road just where the Old Cove Road divides and turns southeast.

1880 Oct. 12. Finished today wagon road from Childs Grave Road south of the Trotting Course, to what has been called the Small Gate, and on to the Ridge Road. (Now called Hale Path).

Laid out wagon road from near the old Grinnell site near Cove to the junction of the Cove Road with the Gap in the Wall Road, to complete the South Bluffs Road round to that point. It will be about as short as the Old Main Road and, though steeper in places, much more free from sand.

Oct. 25. With the help of new hands, Willard Besse, Mosher and our own forces we have cut out West End paths as follows: about 200 yds. west of Gap in the Wall a path to Boulder Swamp, about 200 yds. from road northerly where a fine boulder is brought out on south side of the finest small swamp we have found, also from sand hills north to opening at North Shore, a very picturesque path through woods and openings . . . from same sand hills south, about a quarter of a mile, to bars near Cove Road through fine woods.

Also on Cottage Road nearly 200 yds. east of Painted Path we reopen an old path to Fern Rock near North Shore, cutting Rams Head Drive in two.

1885 We have made a road through Witches Glen and continued it through valleys to the Grinnell Swamp woods and thence by a new road, close by the old One Gun Fort, brought to notice by Ralph E. Forbes this year, on to the back of the Cove House.

We have had Sheriff Lambert of Chilmark, a skillful road builder, at the head of 8 men from Woods Hole improving the following roads: Ridge Road, Imogene's Cradle Road made safe for carriages, extending clear through to the point of wood near Peaked Rock, Bathing Beach Road by Molasses Pond, past Sentinel Tree, through Yellow Gate thence through Beech Orchard to Witches Glen, Main Road via Grinnell Woods and Ft. Ralph to Cove House.

It has been connected through woods with Middle or Cottage Road near Gap in the Wall, thence northerly to new gate near North Shore, into Pine Garden, thence along North Shore via Mt. Cary and back to the East End near Marys Lake.



Road from Mansion House to wall gate in east end of Nonamesset woods has been nearly completed.

It is *guessed* that we have put over 500 days work upon our roads giving us smooth country roads in place of rough ones for about 10 or 12 miles of driving space.

1888 July 10. With Miss Emma Ware drove to Tarpaulin Cove with Quickstep to inspect new West End roads, reached Cove in 47 minutes, went by new cut-off to French Watering Place and along southwest cliffs, thence cutting off to Lunch Tree and on to West End House via Deer Hill in 47 minutes — home via Lake Road and Fern Path and new South Shore Road. We concluded that new North and South Shore roads are very nearly the same distance on the routes taken.

The repair and upkeep of the roads is one of the farm responsibilities which has no end. Many experiments have been tried to improve the roads on the sandy stretches, steep grades and rocky spots, especially on the more heavily travelled ways.

Beach pebbles have proved durable but give bad footing for the horses and rough going for carriages; crushed rock has been more satisfactory but is very expensive; oyster shells, after they have been ground down with use have, perhaps, been the most successful road surface.

Oyster Shells. In the '90s, J. Malcolm Forbes, manager of the Island, had several cargoes of oyster shell shipped from Virginia by schooner. These were spread on the worst spots on the Main road, the North and South Shore Roads, the Eagle Hollow Road and the roads to the various houses. They eventually gave a hard, smooth surface which was not easily gullied by rain.

1905 Ralph E. Forbes ordered a load of 350 tons of oyster shells brought by schooner from Norfolk, Virginia at cost of \$990.27. He noted that these should last for some years.

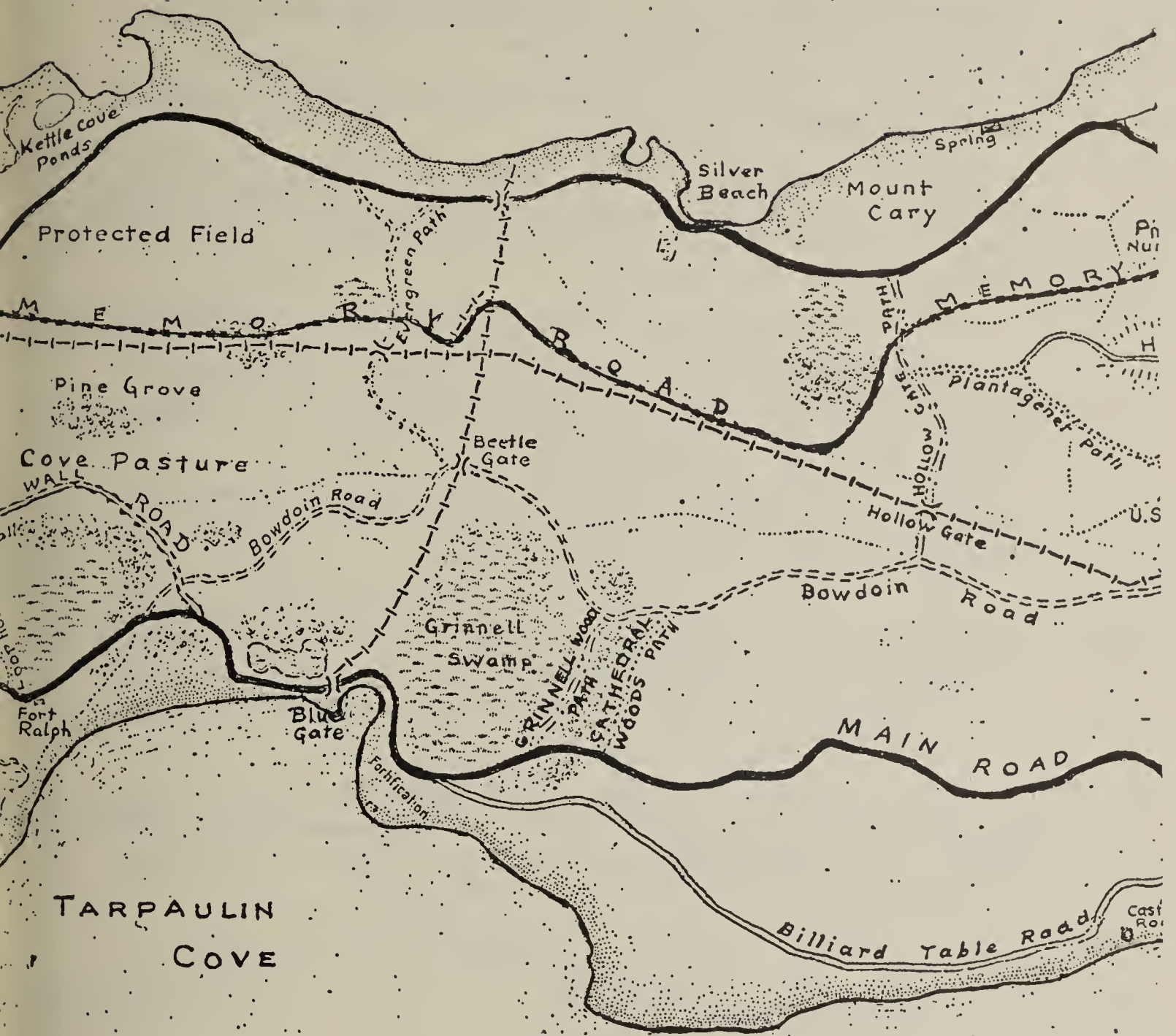
1909 R. E. F. wrote: "I find that the oyster shell roads are wearing out in many places and the last purchased (1905) have been exhausted. I believe that it is desireable to keep the heavily used roads where the shells have already been used, in repair with oyster shells."

In the ensuing years there was correspondence but no shells obtained.

1914 R. E. F. reports: "I have succeeded in getting some small cargoes of oyster shells, the contract for them amounting to a little over 200 tons. About $\frac{3}{4}$ of this amount has been delivered and some already spread upon the roads. The rest is piled in the Harbor Pasture in reserve for use in repairing roads.

There is no further record of shipments, and as the small coasting schoo-

D A Y



ers gradually disappeared it was no longer possible to get either shipments of shells from Virginia nor of ice from Maine.

1914-1938 For 24 years no special mention of road work appears in the Annual Reports.

After the hurricane of Sept. 21st, 1938 it was noted that "Practically every road on the Island that passed through the woods was blocked by fallen trees. The stretches along the beaches were covered with sand and heavy pebbles and needed much repair."

1940 It was suggested that members of the family help in road clearing.

1942 Some road work was done by the farm but much remained to be done. Normal work on the Island is uncertain owing to war conditions and such work as the family can do is timely and helpful.

1944 The hurricane of Sept. 14th struck from the southeast. It destroyed a material portion of the forest; it blocked roads; it felled all telephone and power lines and damaged the bridges.

1951 The road from the Upper Wharf to the Farm has been seriously washed out, particularly during last winter's rains. So much of the road was washed into the harbor that it was necessary to remove the silt from the *Fawn's* slip. Much work has been done, an experimental stretch has been covered with crushed rock.

1952 The Billiard Table Road has been so deeply rutted that it has been closed to vehicles for a number of years. Sufficient work on it has been done that it will be passable this summer. A fund provided by Mrs James S. Russell has paid for the major cost of these repairs.

ROAD REPAIRS

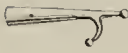
1953 For several years road repair has been concentrated on the areas of principal traffic in the vicinity of the houses and the farm and with few exceptions, such as by-passing the steep grade on the Main Road in Ram-Cat Alley, the outlying roads have been neglected. This year considerable work has been done on the Main Road, the North Shore Road and a major job on Commodore's Path.

1954 Work has continued on the maintenance of roads. Blocks of salt peat, taken from the drainage ditches, were laid in the areas of heavy sand with moderately good results.

The South Shore Road west of Molasses Pond has been damaged by



winter storms occurring at high tide, in some places the banks so washed away that the road is almost undermined. There is some doubt whether this road can be maintained in good order without high cost.



On Aug. 31st the first and most destructive of the three hurricanes of 1954 struck Naushon at high tide. All bridges to Nonamesset were swept away, leaving great widened gaps to be bridged. The beaches and shore line were deeply cut into and many of the wharves, bath houses and boat houses injured or destroyed. All roads bordering the shores required repairs.

1958 The Bowdoin Road (formerly called the Old Main Road) has been virtually impassible for vehicles due to an extremely rocky incline west of Beetle Gate. By use of a bulldozer and considerable tonnage of fill and imported crushed rock this section has been made smooth and durable.

Much routine work on the heavily travelled roads among the houses was also done.

An interesting development is in the experimental stage. The various households of summer residents may sign up for particular roads which they will undertake to keep clear, or at least keep track of to see that any massive obstructions are reported. Several paths have been spoken for and parties have been organized to clear cat briar, brush and trees from those long neglected.

Some areas of heavy sand on the North Shore Road have been covered with thick layers of horse manure to check erosion and establish sod.

In considering roads it must be realized that in the last 25 years there has been a vital change in Naushon conditions.

Formerly, every household had a number of driving and saddle horses which were used in winter in the family winter homes and in summer were, as a matter of course, brought to the Island. Everyone, from grandparents to grandchildren, was accustomed to driving, riding and dealing with horses. There was hardly a day when members of the family or their guests did not take drives in the woods, across the Desert, or to the West End Pond. The hired man was a coachman and had managed and taken care of horses all his life. With changing times all this is a thing of the past. The coachman has become a chauffeur, practically no one knows how to care for horses, and harnessing is almost a lost art. Members of the family who have grown up on the Island still know how to ride and drive, but their guests have often never been in a carriage in their lives. There are far fewer driving horses and even those few are used largely for utilitarian purposes, meeting the launch and picking up groceries. This means that the roads have comparatively little use, as far as driving is concerned. There are still many riding horses and riders and the roads and paths are ridden over. This, however, does not keep them in as good order as constant carriage wear.



On the other hand, modern tractors have made road repair quicker and easier than in former days and an imported bulldozer can accomplish more than a dozen teams and men in a given time.

Probably in the future the main roads will be kept in good order for carriages and many of the smaller paths will be restricted to use for saddle horses.

NAUSHON ROADS

| | | |
|----------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| Abrahams Bosom Path | French Watering | Nonamesset Road |
| Aisle of Beeches | Place Road | North Cary Path |
| Amphitheatre Road | Gap in the Wall Road | North Main Road |
| Apple Tree Path | General's Hollow Road | North Pasture Road |
| Azalea Path | Glen Elvo Path | North Shore Road |
| Bathing Beach Road | Governor Andrew Path | North Sprout Lands Path |
| Billiard Table Road | Governors Walk | November Path |
| Black Woods Path | Grapevine Walk | Old Cottage Lot Road |
| Blaneys Path | Green Path | Old Sheep Yard Road |
| Blue Blazes Path | Grinnell Woods Path | Onawa Path |
| Bobolink Wharf Road | Hadley Cove Road | Osprey Path |
| Bowdoin Road | Hale Path | Painted Path |
| Breakwater Road | Hallowell Path | Pierson Path |
| Cary Path | Happy Valley Road | Pine Woods Path |
| Cathedral Woods Path | Hathaway Path | Plantagenet Path |
| Cedar Swamp Path | Harbor Bluff Road | Pond Road |
| Cedar Wharf Road | Hesper Path | Punch Bowl Road |
| Childs Grave Road | Hilltop Road | Puritan Path |
| Colonels Path | Hollow Gate Path | Rambler Path |
| Colorado Path | Holly Rock Path | Rams Head Path |
| Commodores Path | Hughes Path | Rattlesnake Neck Path |
| Cove Junction | Ice House Road | Ridge Road |
| Crossover Path | Imogenes Cradle Path | Robert Swain Path |
| Cunningham Path | Kettle Cove Road | Russell Road |
| Deer Hill Road | Lackeys Bay Road | Rye Field Road |
| Deer Parlor Path | Lighthouse Pasture Road | Sassafras Path |
| Desert Ride | Link Road | Sheridan Path |
| Don's Path | Lodge Path | Shelter Way |
| Eagle Hollow Road | Loop Hole Path | South Andrew Path |
| East Andrew Path | Lowell Path | South Bluffs Road |
| Elfin Glen Path | Main Road | South Cunningham Path |
| Evergreen Path | Mansion House Road | South Fern Rock Path |
| Fern Path | Maple Tree Path | South Lead |
| Fern Rock Path | Memory Road | South Main Road |
| Fishing Rock Path | Mount Surat Path | South Rye Field Road |
| Fox Holes Road | Newkit Road | South Shore Road |



| | | |
|-------------------------|--------------------|--------------------------|
| Sprout Lands Path | Western Hills Path | Black Gate |
| Squirrel Path | White Cap Road | White Gate |
| Stone House Road | White Gate Path | Yellow Gate |
| Stone House Stable Road | Wild Duck Road | Gap in the Wall Gate |
| Sunset Path | Willow Road | Hale Gate |
| Tanager Path | Woodcock Path | Half Gate |
| Tarpaulin Lane | Yellow Path | Hollow Farm Gate |
| Thicket Path | <i>Gates</i> | Hollow Gate |
| Timmy Point Road | Blue Gate | Lock Gate |
| Trotting Course | Beetle Gate | Plantagenet Gate |
| Twilight Path | Crane Pond Gate | Russell Gate |
| Uncatena Road | Colonels Gate | Red Gate |
| Vecketimest Road | Evergreen Gate | Uncatena Bridge Gate |
| West Beach Road | Green Gate | Sarabs Fishing Rock Gate |

(For location of Roads, Gates and notable places, see map).

1984 Additional roads: Fiddler Crab Road, Merlin Path, Monsod Road, Shaw Path.

Additional gates: Breakwater Gate, Brown Gate, Golden Gate (Crane Pond Gate), Orange Gate, Plaid Gate, Purple Gate, Sapphire Gate, Tarpaulin Cove Gate, Trotting Course Gate.

Chapter V

SHEEP, DEER, GAME

SHEEP

Sheep were among the first livestock brought to the Elizabeth Islands, and probably Anthony Blaney had a flock when he was living at Tarpaulin Cove in 1684.

1694 John Weekes became a tenant of Wait Winthrop and in the agreement signed by him (1695) and his brother, William, it is stated that "I do engage to look after and provide for the stock, and till what land I can, for which I am to have one third part of the increase of neat cattle, sheep and goates after the stock is made good."

1699 In a lease of the westernmost part of Tarpolin Cove Island to Caleb Ray and Joseph Ffuller the schedule of stock shows:

| | |
|-----------------------------|-------------------|
| 20 sheep | 40 goates |
| 6 cowes (one big with calf) | 1 pair of steeres |
| 5 calves | |

1707 In the lease of Naushon from Wait Winthrop to John Weekes some eight years later there appears to have been a decided increase in stock. The schedule reads:

| | | |
|---------------------------------------|-------|-------------|
| 200 sheep | @ £65 | |
| 60 goates | | |
| 18 cows | @ £49 | 10s. |
| oxen | @ £14 | 6s. 4 pence |
| ffour year old steers | @ £22 | |
| one bull ffive heiffers | @ £16 | |
| ffour 3 year old steers | @ £20 | |
| 2 year old ½ steers and ½ heiffers | @ £24 | |

1710 Joseph Ffuller to Wait Winthrop:

"For the winter afore this last have lost 130 sheep, and the summer following being consumed with drouth and worms I have lost 4 or 5 cattle and I am afraid I shall lose more, if it shall please God to send such another summer we shall have no creatures alive, for we have little green now."

The ear mark of Joseph Fuller is a crop of each ear and a ha'penny under side of each ear.

1714 Wait Winthrop to his son: "Fuller was here tother day, says the French killed all his stock and left him but 2 sheep and 5 or 6 cattle."

1767 Agreement between William and James Bowdoin and Isaac Robinson:

"That the sd. Isaac Robinson at his own cost and charge will take care of the stock of Cattle, Horses, Sheep, Goats etc. on said Island. That at his own cost and charge sd. Isaac Robinson will find proper attendance . . . and for the persons that may work for them at shearing and other times in collecting and shifting the stock aforesaid, said Isaac Robinson is to assist in getting hay, driving creatures, washing and shearing sheep & in any other necessary work."

1774 Mr. Isaac Robinsons acct. with John Read:

June 14 To 20¼ lb. sheeps wool @ £1 4s. 3¼ pence.

Quoted from "EARLY HISTORY OF NAUSHON ISLAND"

1778 "9th May. Fine weather. Wind N. W.

The transports from the Elizabeth Islands arrived last night in the Seconnet passage. The troops have been very successful and met with no opposition. The two transports have brought 884 sheep and lambs — 150 of them were bought and paid for from such of the inhabitants as were well affected and willing to sell them. The rest, being the property of noted rebels were taken without payment. The party has also secured about 1000 more sheep and lambs on a small island under protection of the *Unicorn*, until transports can return for them. The whole were taken from Nashawn Island. A party of an officer and 40 men embarked on board the Transports this day, and they are to return immediately for the remainder of the sheep.

1814 Jan. 18. The *Retaliation* had about 40 men and the Liverpool Packet about 25. The night previous to their leaving the Cove they landed and stole 6 sheep (half merino breed) and several turkeys belonging to Mr Withington."

1804 James Bowdoin to his nephew, Capt. J. B. Temple

"We have lately had a sample of Irish Sheep which it is said have been procured upon very easy terms and have turned out well. If a couple of good rams and one or two ewes could be had without paying an extra price, and a vessel for Boston should offer I should be glad you would procure them. Remember however, I do not mean to speculate in ye imaginary perfection of a particular kind of sheep especially those which are very large, as I know such must dwindle in their size from the different manner of managing them upon the Elizabeth Islands. It is the well made and well woolled sheep of ye common breed that I want."

James Bowdoin to his nephew, Sir Grenville Temple

Boston, May 17, 1804

"... as you intend to become an American farmer I should advise you to procure some rams of ye Spanish breed of sheep or rather of ye sheep of Mt. Atlas in ye Emperor of Morocco's dominion, could they be procured . . . it is said to be ye best breed in ye world. . . . If neither of these can be procured I think it probable that ye Neapolitan sheep be found to be of Spanish origin and could be had without difficulty and at a small price, in which case should there be an opportunity of sending 3 rams and as many ewes by an American vessel to Boston, could wish they might be procured; it is necessary that they be picked sheep, well made and well wooled, and that a sufficient quantity of fodder and oats should be shipped with them."

James Bowdoin to Thomas L. Winthrop

Feb. 1807

"In regard to ye Spanish sheep nine rams were shipped aboard the schooner *Thetis* of New London, Capt. Austin, agreeably to ye enclosed bill of lading ye schooner sailed from St. Ander on ye 14th ult. and I hope will safely deliver them at the Island, where I hope no care or expense will be saved in taking care of them, especially on their first landing.

Their superiority to every kind of sheep is acknowledged by the experienced of all Europe. Rams and ewes of the same race sell here for from \$150. to \$200. each while those of the French race sell here for \$12.

And in order that the greatest advantage may be drawn from ye introduction of ye breed I would have the Island of Nennemessett appropriated to rearing of sheep of the pure strain and that a suitable price be put upon them and I beg that an establishment may be immediately devised for their support and maintenance in winter and in summer either at Naushon or Nennemessett or at both. And I would have this flock as extensive as it will bear, one ram will serve 50 sheep, the best ewes of our flock.

Those having the finest and best wool should be selected, and an increased benefit will be observed every year as you approach the pure race, taking care that the rams are pure and that the ewes be progressively bred from them, to the 4th generation when ye race will become unmixed.

Tell Mr Bullard to provide himself with some cooling physic in case they should prove costive, as costiveness is ye disease with which almost all animals are afflicted on first going to ye Island."

1810

James Bowdoin to Baalis Bullard

Boston, March 26, 1810

Sir;

In regard to the sheep, I intende the cow pasture to become a sheep pasture, partly in summer and wholly in winter, in order to carry into full

operation the plan I contemplate, and I wish you would see Mr Barnabas Chadwick & know from him whether he will engage himself to me for a year or eight months in order to take the charge and oversight of my flock, as a shepherd to have the exclusive care, pursuing such methods as I shall point out. My present opinion is that Nonnimessett must be appropriated as a temporary run for the (ram) lambs between shearing and the proper time for selling them. In this case I conceive there must be a pen especially made for the lambs, so that the ewe, each as it is shorn shall be turned out to find its lamb, which if a ram, then the ewe and her lamb to be marked and sent to Nonnimessett. If a ewe lamb, then to be marked ie. her degree of Merino blood, seared with a hot iron and turned out into the cow pasture.

The execution of the plan I propose will call for an increase of hands and one or two more days for shearing, which must be more carefully performed.

I apprehend the best shearers from all parts of the country may be procured for \$1. a day and found.

The close wooled sheep of the Merino breed require the nicest shearers that the wool should be cut close and even without injuring the animal. In France they shear the sheep on a large table round which the shearers set, and the sheep are tied to it. Mr Livingston recommends the tying the fore and hind legs to a bar with two cross pieces, the bar 18 in. long & the cross pieces 6 in. This would leave the sheep standing in their natural position with their legs a little stretched out, or a rod of iron with a curvature at each end would, perhaps, be still better, he says."

". . . the number of sheep usually kept on the Island is about 2000."

James Bowdoin to Seth Robinson

1811 "I have a number of small things to send to Mr Chadwick, such as sheep bells, sheep shears, bill hook and old sail to make an awning for the shearers in June.

I have likewise purchased 10 more Merino sheep and I am not determined on the manner of sending them to the Island. Desire Mr Chadwick to examine the sheep, the Merino and the lambs which were droven to Boston, to see if any of them have the scab or itch, & if so they must be put by themselves and occasionally rubbed with the ointment. . . . It is said that a strong decoction of tobacco mixed with sea salt is also a certain remedy."

1815 James (Winthrop) Bowdoin to his father, T. L. Winthrop

"This Island looks well with the exception of carcasses of dead sheep which assail not only your eyes, but nose, every rod you walk. I fear one half of ye sheep are dead."

The following pages give statistics of the Island flock, extracts from "Farm Records, Vol. 1". They are not exciting reading but may be of interest to those who have for many years made a study of the sheep.

1844 On hand 1432 sheep
out 324

1108 and 350 lambs = 1731 to begin the year with

Weight of wool 445½ lb. sold @ 36¢ cash

Wedders bt. on Vineyard 158

Breeding sheep bt. of Thomas Hollis, 14. The ewes are 1 & 2 years old, bucks and ewes of long wooled sheep marked H on the side, the longest tail buck is an imported Cheviot, the other with one ear is a Leicester buck with Cheviot properties. The 2 Leicester ewes are the best bred they have and are past their prime, the smallest is perfect.

1845 On hand 1401 sheep
out 158

1243 and 427 lambs = 1670

(Aug. 15 we lost 25 lambs trod to death in sheep yard).

Sept. bt. on Vineyard 74 wedders, 50 ewes = 124

Oct. bt. on Rhode Island 4 half blooded Leicester Bucks

Oct. bt. on Rhode Island 3 full blooded Merino

SUMMARY OF RESULTS IN SHEEP FROM 1833 TO 1848

| <i>Year</i> | <i>No. of Sheep</i> | <i>Next Year</i> | <i>Sheep Lost</i> | <i>Percent Loss</i> |
|-------------|-------------------------|----------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| 1833 | 1356 | 991 | 365 | 27.0 |
| 1834 | 1512 | 1180 | 332 | 22.0 |
| 1835 | 1611 | 1101 | 510 | 32.0 |
| 1836 | 1412 | 1238 | 174 | 12.5 |
| 1837 | 1538 | 1127 | 411 | 26.5 |
| 1838 | 1387 | 1155 | 232 | 17.0 |
| 1839 | 1497 | 1225 | 272 | 18.0 |
| 1840 | 1591 | 1460 | 131 | 8.0 |
| 1841 | 1738 | 1420 | 318 | 18.5 |
| 1842 | 1920 | 1472 | 448 | 23.0 |
| 1843 | 1731 | 1432 | 229 | 17.0 |
| 1844 | 1630 | 1401 | 229 | 14.0 |

In 1847 bt. at Vineyard 272 and at Quissett, 55 Total 1918.

From 1833 to 1848/9 the loss was 24.9% in 13 years or 19% per annum.

There were 5393 lambs, an average of 313 per annum.

In 1848 there were 2100 sheep.

Sheep year 1848 began with 2124
 Bought at Nantucket 337
 " of C. Wyer 287 sheep and 30 lambs
 " " E. W. Gardner 261 sheep and 59 lambs

Whole no. to begin year 2444

Sales of wool to Boston. June 22 8 bales 1509 lb. @ 30¢ = \$444.30
 Sales of wool to Boston. June 28 7 " 1060 lb. @ 23¢ = 269.62
 Sales of wool to Boston. July 3 3484 lb. @ 29¢ = 1010.36

\$1724.28

Expenses 678.19

\$1046.09

Invoice of wool consigned to Geo. B. Upton:

36 sacks Island Wool, 4779 lb., 5 sacks from West End 614 lb.

30 sacks from Ephraim Lake and 6 sacks J. W. Gifford. Total shipped 6133 lb.

1849 Whole 4781 lb. net as cash @ 28½¢ per lb. = \$1353.67

Sold to C. Wyer & Co.; June delivered them 82 fat sheep
 July " " 51 " "
 Sept. " " 60 " "
 Nov. " " 72 " "

Also 2 calves skins, 6 fat cows, 2 oxen and 2 cows

Sept. 10. 1599 sheep val. at \$1.50 ea. and 512 lambs @ .50 = \$2654.50

Total value of stock \$4232.50

Value of stock bought with Island \$3150.00

1833-1849 Loss on sheep; 20,723 Total number, 1594 average flock.

In 14 years average loss per year = 19%.

1850 Jonah Willis of Kingston, Mass. for Mr Hilton, 97½ State St., Boston

Bought of Naushon Island; 21 sacks clean wool 3520 lb.

1 sack unwashed wool 140 lb.

22 sacks unwashed wool

Net cash \$1240.75

1851 Total no. sheep 1653 at June shearing 1375 loss 278
 lambs 469

1844

taken out 267

1577

Sept. 4. 4 lambs driven up and 411 sheep found, some at West End 20% (?)

| | | | |
|------|------------------------|-------|----------------------|
| 1852 | Total at June shearing | 1214 | |
| | Drawn out for use | 184 | |
| | | <hr/> | |
| | | 1030 | |
| | | 1030 | began year with 1428 |
| | lambs | 425 | |
| | Bought at Vineyard | 112 | |
| | | <hr/> | |
| | | 1567 | |
| | ewes | 723 | bucks 40 |
| | wedders | 267 | lambs 425 |

1853 Total at June shearing 1230.

1854 Bought of Crapo, Nonamesset tenant 148
beginning of year 1556

Total 1704

1855 Begin year with 1593
End year with 1213

loss 380

1856 Begin year with 1213 sheep and lambs
Bt. on Vineyard 272

End year with 1485
Sold to Dunham 237 sheep
Bt. on Vineyard 302 sheep

1857 June, sold Hilton & Gore wool @ 39¢ for Island and Cove
@ 36¢ Sandy fleeces from Nashawena

sold 22 sacks wool net 2774½ lb.

10 sacks Tarpaulin Cove 1416 lb. Received \$1606.09

June shearing total 1553 bt. on Vineyard 300

Bought on Rhode Island 4 Southdown bucks

Turned out 1857 in June found and sheared 1130, loss 727.

This was the most severe winter and the most snow on the Island for 24 years, many sheep were buried in the snow banks, more driven off the banks into the sea. One flock of 150 Island wedders turned out in Cottage Lot, all smart sheep, *not one* was found, no doubt they were drowned.

1858 Began with 1516
 In June 1216

Loss 300

This result is very mysterious after one of the mildest winters known for many years!

| | | | | | | | | |
|------------------|--------|---------|------|----|-----|-------|---|-------|
| | 1853/4 | loss on | 1704 | of | 409 | sheep | = | 24% |
| | 1854/5 | " " | 1593 | " | 486 | " | = | 30% |
| | 1855/6 | " " | 1585 | " | 204 | " | = | 13% |
| Very hard winter | 1856/7 | " " | 1857 | " | 727 | " | = | 39% |
| | 1857/8 | " " | 1516 | " | 300 | " | = | 20% |
| | 1858/9 | " " | 1535 | " | 209 | " | = | 13.5% |

1859 There were sent on last year () sheep and rams brought originally from Shanghai, given us by Warren Delano Jr.

| | |
|--|-----------|
| Sheared 3170 lb., Sold to Hallowell & Howland @ 39¢ cash | \$1236.30 |
| Mr Giffords | 427.03 |

1860 Began with 1443
 Mr Gifford's 340

1103

1861 Sheared 820

Loss 283 together with killed and sold, 51

Lost (334) which is tremendous on the small flock of 1103, being nearly 25% and showing that by having them nearer home we do not save a great proportion. The weather was mild as the average.

Have arranged to keep on Nonamesset all the lambs and 100 oldest sheep and feed with corn, now at 58¢ per bushel.

End year with 1276.

1862 Began with 1276
 40 bt. of Mr Gifford

1316

Sheared 1081

Loss 235

Still a large loss considering that we fed the old and young during the winter.

| | |
|------------|------|
| Turned out | 1065 |
| Lambs | 490. |

| | |
|-------------|------|
| End of year | 1555 |
|-------------|------|

Showed a large increase in lambs. Can this be owing to better feeding?

Our wool sold to Jonah Willis, 2565 lb. @ 50¢ = \$1231.50

| | |
|----------------------------------|---------|
| Rent and profit, sheep & pasture | 1574.31 |
|----------------------------------|---------|

We have increased 280 and 661 lb. more wool. Is this feeding?

Oct. 5. Of the 233 sheep bought last year on Vineyard in September, we found in June 209, loss only 14.

1861/2 Feeding sheep. Fed all lambs & 100 sheep, about 300 from Dec. to 15th April, about 5 pecks corn and 6 pecks turnips;

120 days, say, 75¢ corn and 25¢ turnips = \$1. per day = \$125.

To feed 400 lambs and 100 sheep for 120 days will take at same rate 2 pecks each, or 250 bu.

| | | |
|------------------|-----------------|-----|
| Corn: sheep | @ ½ bu. for 300 | 150 |
| hogs | @ ½ bu. for 22 | 550 |
| poultry | | 125 |
| horses, about 30 | | 530 |

1355

Cannot we gain by reducing cows and giving their winter and summer feed to sheep? Also by keeping certain lots for the winter resort of our flock?

| | |
|---------------------------|----------|
| 1863 Sheared in June 1115 | 2765 lb. |
|---------------------------|----------|

| | |
|-------|-----|
| Lambs | 350 |
|-------|-----|

| | |
|--------------------|----|
| Bought at Vineyard | 92 |
|--------------------|----|

1557 began year with 1539

Sheared in 1863: 1115, loss 424 (27%).

Sold wool from 1115 sheep, 2765 lb., @ 71¢ to J. C. Robinson, agent of Moonakie Factory.

1864 Began year 1484, sheared in June by A. C. White 1087, loss 397, wool 2400 lb. sold to C. F. Joy of Boston @ 102½.

| | |
|---|--------|
| 1865 Turned out 1087, bought 18 = 1105 + 400 lambs, | |
| less 100 (sold) | = 1405 |
| Sheared in June | 1145 |

| | |
|------|---------|
| Loss | 260 18% |
|------|---------|

Estimated value, 1087 @ \$3.25 = \$3532.75.

Sheep feeding memo. Oct. 16, 1865. J. M. F. estimates that in hard weather the sheep should have about $3\frac{1}{2}$ lb. of hay. Perhaps on our West End Farm we should need to feed them about 100 days, say, 350 lb. hay at \$20. per ton @ 50¢ per sheep for 300 sheep = \$150.

Expense & labor 25.

Outlay \$175.

Profits should be at least 1 lb. per sheep of wool.

1866 Began year 1325
Sheared 1156

Loss 169 12% At end of year 1281

1867 Sheared 1048
Loss, hard winter 181 about 15%
Lambs 350 in all 1398, killed & sold 113
At end of year total 1285

1868 Sheared only 960, lost 325, over 25%
Sold our wool to Dr Cleaveland 3600 lb. East End
Cove rents (2 years) 2600 lb.
West End rents (2 years) 1537 lb.

7737 lb. @ 46¢ = \$3559.02

1869 Began with 1117
Sheared 991

Loss 126 12½%

1870 Sheared 1215, lambs 443 = 1658, drew out 162. Total 1496.

1871/2 Began with 1500
Sheared 1100
1100 gave 2448 lb. wool (2.22 lb. ea.)

Loss 400 very bad winter
Turned out in June 1400.

1873 Sold wool to Joshua B. Robinson @ 70¢ cash here.
West End Farm 522, J. W. Gifford 1300,
A. C. White 1600 = total 3422.
June turned out 1269 sheep and lambs
West End 23

Total 1292

1876 Started with 935 sheep
401 lambs

Total 1336

Sold the clips of 1876/7 in Boston through Norwood P. Hallowell, netting here about 44¢.

1877 Started with 1336
Sold & killed 125

1211

Sheared in June 1191

Total loss 20

Loss of only 20 which is unexampled & which Mr Sutherland attributes to extra care of lambs, and feeding out a little hay & about 430 bu. of corn, worth about 70¢ and perhaps 1½ tons of salt hay.

1878 Began with 1631
Sheared 1396
Killed & sold 120

1879 Began with 1855
Sheared 1370
Ended year with 1228

1883 Total 1300, sold 50 total 1250.

1884 Total 1325 worth about 33¢ now. 235 sheep & lambs at West End Farm.

1885 Total 1375 wool 3230. 229 sheep & lambs, 596 lb. wool at West End Farm.

1886 Total 1305 wool 3150. 205 sheep & lambs, 537 lb. wool at West End Farm.

1886-1896 During these 10 years no sheep records have been found, the Farm Record, Vol. 1 ends and it is not until 1896 that sheep are mentioned in the Farm Book of 1895.

The Island flock consisted of:

| | |
|-------------------------|-----|
| Sheep shorn at East End | 891 |
| Lambs marked | 302 |
| Sheep at West End | 146 |
| Lambs marked | 37 |

| | |
|--------------------|-------|
| Sheep at Cove Farm | 386 |
| Lambs at Cove Farm | 187 |
| | <hr/> |
| Total | 1833 |

1904 Eight years later, after Edward W. Forbes became Island Manager, there are again detailed accounts of the flock: "owing to the severity of the winter (1903/4) a great many sheep died. Mr Morrison buried about 100 and undoubtedly many died that he failed to find.

The custom of killing sheep for meat was started again. These are the reasons which account for the following figures:

| | | | |
|-----------|------------|-----------|-----------|
| Year 1904 | 1212 sheep | Year 1905 | 909 sheep |
| | 208 lambs | | 297 lambs |
| | <hr/> | | <hr/> |
| Total | 1420 | Total | 1206 |

1905 The number of sheep and lambs counted in June 1906 was 1167. The previous year there were 1206 so apparently there was a loss of 40. The number of woolies uncaught makes it difficult to estimate the exact number, but we know of the following reasons why the flock did not increase: owing to a very severe storm in June about 50 sheep died immediately after the shearing, about 100 lambs disappeared during the summer whether from foxes or poachers we have not discovered, about 60 wethers were killed for mutton, and about 44 weakly sheep were sold in the autumn.

The rams we bought in Nov. 1904 in Canada lived through the winter.

In the spring they were put out on Nonamesset and soon became so run down that in July they were moved to the Protected Field. Several of them died there and others died after they were brought back to the home pasture.

In the autumn we bought a few rams from Nashawena and a few from Canada, also a number of ram lambs from the Vineyard. We hope in future to manage without buying rams, by means of exchanging them with the neighboring islands.

1908 The sheep have increased in a satisfactory manner:

| | | |
|-----------|-------|------|
| June 1906 | total | 1167 |
| 1907 | " | 1244 |
| 1908 | " | 1560 |

In the summer of 1907 sold 1 ram to a man in Cuttyhunk, and 1 to Mr Eustis at Cataumet. Exchanged 4 rams with Nashawena.

Gross receipts from the sheep this year were \$1069.57, an increase of over \$250. over preceding year. We bought no new rams this year.

1909 Ralph E. Forbes became Island Manager but E. W. Forbes was asked to give special attention to the sheep.

| | |
|--------------------------------------|------|
| Total number sheep and lambs in 1908 | 1560 |
| Total number sheep and lambs in 1909 | 1145 |

Loss 415

During shearing 15 ewes were smothered. In early spring I found evidence that a number of lambs had been killed and eaten by one or more foxes.

1910 Total flock was 1705.

1911 In June the count was 1890 sheep and lambs and a good many were in poor condition, indicating that the Island is rather overstocked. I decided to make a larger cull than usual and to reduce the flock to about 1400. Received \$625. @ \$2.25 per head.

I am distributing hay during the severe part of the winter, with, I believe, the result of reducing the death rate considerably.

The net returns exclusive of cost of this feeding was \$1202. showing that this is the most profitable department of the farm.

1913 Sheep have done fairly well this year, the gross returns \$1706, expenses of shearing etc. \$232, leaving apparent net return \$1474. The cost of winter feeding and time of farm men driving is not estimated.

The thoroughbred Shropshire purchased of Mr Wardwell seemed unable to withstand the climate and scant feed of Naushon, only one ram has survived of the 4 purchased. We hope that we have got an improvement in the blood of the flock through the effect of crossing these rams upon our own selected ewes. The half breds appear to be a rather better quality of lamb than the average in the flock.

1914 Sheep less profitable this year, that account showing \$500. less profit than last year.

1915 Sheep far more profitable this year, there being a net profit of \$2110. as against \$983. last year. This was partly due to making a large cull and getting a fairly good price for the sheep culled. I have reduced the flock by selling off about 400 sheep. Return for wool better than last year.

1916 Sheep less profitable:

1. Many sheep lost much wool prior to shearing.
2. We had reduced the flock by about 400.
3. We made a small cull, therefore return from sale was small.

1917 The sheep suffered from the severe storms and the result was disastrous to all the early lambs. Total number of lambs in June was 157 instead of the usual 330 to 350. Many ewes died at time of lambing due to weather conditions. There has been a small profit, however, owing to the high price of wool.

1922 "This year marked an epoch in sheep management, 250 grade Hampshire yearling ewes were purchased, about 100 lb. on the average and larger and closer wooled than former run of Island sheep. We used pure bred Hampshire rams for the first time. We are shipping away most of the old sheep, retaining only picked ewes and strong lambs." (W. C. F.)

1935 Bill Thompson, Flock Master, bought 75 ewes, 15 of which are pure bred Cheviots, all 3 years or younger. This is to test the appropriateness of this breed to Island conditions.

1937 W. Cameron Forbes was managing Trustee.

An extraordinary episode occurred during this year in the appearance of a wild dog that seemed to have many of the characteristics of a wolf or coyote. He was seen by H. S. Forbes and Stanley Cobb in November. In the sheep drive on June 20th he started from the bushes at Rams Head, chased for over a mile by W. H. Forbes, and was seen by 20 or more sheep drivers.

He was very long, low at the shoulder, had a thin, hairless tail like a pointer, shaggy, of a gray-brown color, rather heavy as to the muzzle, and ran with the curious loping gate of the wolf. He made sad havoc of our lambs, no less than 65 bodies being found. He tore out their sides.

Count of lambs was $\frac{1}{2}$ of what we got last year, 109 lambs against 226 the year before from the same number of ewes.

| | |
|------|-------------|
| 1936 | 417 ewes |
| | 289 wethers |

| | |
|-------|-----|
| Total | 706 |
|-------|-----|

1939 This year J. Malcolm Forbes was appointed Managing Trustee to succeed W. Cameron Forbes.

The Sheep Committee under the leadership of William H. Forbes has been finding that the poor results of recent years are probably due in large part to 3 or more intestinal parasites with which the Island seems to be infected.

This year there has been a great decrease in the flock:

| | |
|------------|---------------------|
| 1938 total | 687 sheep and lambs |
| 1939 " | 466 and 112 lambs |

| | |
|------|-----|
| Loss | 155 |
|------|-----|

wool 1016 lb. = \$366.52

1940 This year 503 sheep including 146 lambs

wool 1325 lb. = \$530.00

The Trustees have been trying the experiment of putting the sheep at alternate ends of the Island for a year and a half at a time. This is to purify the soil from infection and let the vegetation come back at the unused end.

After the autumn sheeping they are to be put at the West End, where they will remain for a year and a half.

1941 Sheep showed a balance of \$207.75 this year. Sheared 82 more than last year and 287 lb. more wool, total 1612 lb. Sold it for 52¢ per lb. instead of 42¢ (in 1940).

1942 After the death of J. Malcolm Forbes on Nov. 16, 1941, Copley Amory, Jr. was appointed Managing Trustee. Sheep have done well. Increase of 80 sheep and 400 lb. more wool @ 50¢ per lb. bringing gross profit to about \$1000. and net, \$700.

| 1942 | | 1943 | |
|---------------|------------|---------------|------------|
| total no. | 728.0 | total no. | 595.0 |
| wt. wool | 2313.0 lb. | wt. wool | 1695.0 lb. |
| wt. per sheep | 4.4 lb. | wt. per sheep | 3.7 lb. |
| price per lb. | 54.0¢ | price per lb. | 54.0¢ |
| Receipts | \$1164.04 | Receipts | \$863.00 |

1943

Arrangement with Amelia Forbes

As of Oct. 24th, 1943 the Trustees made an agreement with Amelia Forbes of which the focal points were the leasing to her of the Naushon flock and the pasture land of the Island, with the right to use it for the grazing of sheep or other livestock, in suitable enclosures, for a period of 2 years unless terminated sooner by her with a minimum notice of 1 month.

Since taking over the sheep last autumn, Amelia's policy has been, first, to get rid of sheep unlikely to survive the winter, and second, to replace wethers over a year old with ewes. She has been anxious to keep the flock sufficiently within boundaries to keep close watch over them and to feed them to some extent through the winter months. She has made some effort to repair fences and is resting certain pastures to free them from parasites as well as to control the grazing. She brought on in April, 1944 70 head of yearling Herefords from Montana, 60 heiffers and 10 steers.

They have gained, since arrival, 150 lb. apiece, but have not fattened to any degree.

Our lessee has put 40 tons of lime on the Lighthouse Pasture, and clover seed as an improvement. Drought has handicapped the results.

Since the sheeping most of the wethers have been sold, rams also.

Amelia has acquired 7 new rams and plans to get 50 ewes.

1944 The second agreement with Amelia Forbes, whereby she assumed the duties of Caretaker for Tarpaulin Cove, was signed on Sept. 14th, 1944. The extremely cold winter, the spring drought and finally the devastating hurricane of Sept. 15th, the day after she assumed her responsibilities, gave her a difficult problem.

The sheep wintered at Nonamesset. In early April they were driven to the protected field. They were shorn at the Cove in May, 27th to 31st.

During the year Amelia sold 120 old wethers and rams and bought 11 rams and 35 ewes. 400 sheep were sheared and it is estimated that there are 50 still at large.

Amelia operated energetically under both agreements and she faced unusually difficult weather conditions and especially difficult war-time labor conditions. When the agreements terminated she decided not to renew.

1952 Last winter was a severe one for the sheep. A very heavy snow-storm in late February left drifts 6 to 8 feet deep. Losses under these circumstances were inevitable. During the year we sold 71 sheep and 204 lambs and bought four rams. There were about 570 head on the Island in November which is about 60 more than a year earlier.

While we have been doing very well with our Cheviot lambs in recent years, the amount of wool has been decreasing. Beginning in 1946 it has been as follows: 4.3 lb., 4.11 lb., 3.2 lb., 4.2 lb., 3.7 lb., 3.0 lb.

Analysis of receipts and expenses:

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-----------|----------------|-----------|
| Sale of sheep and lambs | \$4739.00 | Farm labor | \$1784.92 |
| Sale of 1418 lb. wool | 1109.72 | Shearing | 353.10 |
| | | Rams purchased | 395.77 |
| Gross total | \$5848.72 | Other expenses | 1082.21 |
| | 3616.00 | | |
| | | | \$3616.00 |
| Net profit | \$2232.72 | | |

1953 Lamb crop decreased from 302 in 1951 to 190 in 1952. A further decline in weight of wool per sheep to 2.5 lb. led to decision to import 2 Hampshire rams in hopes to improve wool characteristics of flock. Wooden handling pens were rebuilt at East End and as a result sheep account shows loss for the year of \$1410.

In November when sheep were brought from Nonamesset many were suffering from swelling in the mouth. This disease was identified as Ecthyma. It is contagious, lasts about 2 weeks and is seldom fatal though secondary infections may occur.

Sheep are to be kept west of Yellow Gate Wall to rest the pastures at the East End.

| | | | | |
|------|--------------|------|------|------|
| 1954 | Total count: | 1951 | 1952 | 1953 |
| | shorn | 468 | 471 | 509 |
| | lambs | 302 | 190 | 343 |

Total count in June is largest for 18 years, wool per sheep 2.5 to 3.2 lb. Lambs per ewe from 45% to 86%.

Although the flock appears healthy and lamb crop good, evidence of three parasites has been found, whip worm, Nodule worm and Stomach worm.

The June sheep drive appeared to be the most successful of any since the 1944 hurricane. In spite of the sale of 429 head in the previous year, the June count was 30 greater than the year before. The amount of wool per sheep increased from 3.2 to 3.5 lb., 1892 lb. of wool was sold for \$1175.27 and 313 sheep and lambs were sold for \$1294.95.

Two lots were sold to individuals who were willing to experiment with methods of fattening them. Both found that our sheep did not respond well when put on richer pastures and when offered grain. A special effort has been made to give the lambs a good start by giving extra feed on the Island at lambing time.

1954 The experiment with Hampshire rams appears reasonably successful. The crosses showing the Hampshire strain produced good fleeces, and lambs of good appearance. As Hampshires are docile and drive well this small admixture of Hampshire blood may have contributed to the successful drive in June.

A new experiment with Montdale rams has begun, but as the Montdale is similar to the Cheviot in appearance it may be difficult to identify their offspring. The Montdale is originally a cross between the Cheviot and the Columbia and is advertised to produce heavier and better quality fleeces than the Cheviot and to produce lambs which fatten readily.

1955 The trial of Montdale rams continues and appears promising.

| | | | |
|----------------------|-----|-------------|-----|
| June shearing, shorn | 496 | Sales sheep | 244 |
| lambs | 268 | lambs | 167 |
| <hr/> | | <hr/> | |
| Total | 764 | Total | 411 |

1956 Receipts: Sale of 1460 lb. wool \$ 736.97
Sale of sheep and lambs 1737.95

| | |
|-------|-----------|
| Total | \$2474.92 |
| | 1590.64 |
| | <hr/> |

Net profit \$ 884.28

Expenses = \$1590.64.

1957 During past 10 years quality of wool has declined.

| | | | |
|-----------------|-----|-------------|-----|
| June 1956 shorn | 399 | Sales sheep | 86 |
| lambs | 196 | lambs | 68 |
| <hr/> | | <hr/> | |
| Total | 585 | Total | 154 |

Net loss was \$246.41.

1958 It seems that results from introduction of Montdale rams is beginning to show. Wool per sheep increased 0.3 lb. in 1956, further increase of .3 lb. in 1957 to 3.3 lb. per sheep. Fewer sheep shed before the sheeping.

Feed was short because of last summer's drought and flock was reduced.

Two Suffolk rams were introduced last fall. We have some good crosses from Hampshire rams brought on in 1952, but that breed is too different from Cheviot to produce good results.

| | |
|------------|-----|
| 1957 shorn | 356 |
| lambs | 143 |

| | | | |
|-------|-----|-------|-----|
| Total | 499 | sales | 250 |
|-------|-----|-------|-----|

The above account of the Naushon flock does not pretend to be readable; it is for the sheep enthusiasts who can here see how the flock has been managed through the years and realize how many experiments have been tried.

It has not been possible to "modernize" sheep. They go quietly along producing wool and lambs much as they have for 300 years, and will probably continue to do so as long as Naushon retains its pastoral character.



DEER

One of the most fascinating and enjoyable features of Naushon is its deer population. From season to season the deer vary in apparent numbers, at times, in mid-summer seeming very scarce, and then in the autumn coming out in great numbers.

Deer are native to all New England, including the Elizabeth Islands.

The explorer Verrazano wrote in 1524: "There are beasts in great abundance, as harts, deere, lucernes and other kinds."

1602 John Brereton, in his account of Gosnold's stay in Cuttyhunk, says: "Here are also in this Island great store of deer which we saw, and other beasts as we saw by their tracks."

1699 In Wait Winthrop's deed to Ray and Fuller the latter are given "Free privileges for all such deer, wild turkeys, partridges and quails which the said Winthrop hath upon the Island together with the increase thereof."

The early deeds and agreements, however, definitely specify that the deer are not to be hunted or destroyed by either the white tenants or the Indians.

In 1710 Joseph Fuller noted the losses due to the hard winter and that "the deare are sadly dying."

1765 A Bill for the Preservation of Moose and Deer on Tarpolin Cove

Island and Nennemessett Island, lying and being in the County of Dukes County, was passed in the Massachusetts Legislature.

During the next 100 years there is very little mention of deer.

1866 In the fall a fine Adirondac buck, fawn and doe were seen.

1868 About 22 dead deer were found, of which some had been shot.
Deer scarce.

Sept. Turned out a buck without horns, supposed 18 months old and a doe of the same age received through Mr J. H. Gifford from C. N. Swift.

1871 Oct. Turned out a doe, ears slit . . . one of a pair bought of Mr Pond of Long Plain for \$25. They came from Virginia and have had young.

1885 Turned out in the winter 8 does and 4 bucks from Baltimore Park, which seem to have done well. We have accepted a buck and doe, supposed from Florida, which J. S. Croft offers me at Maplewood.

1909 E. W. Forbes reports: "The deer have become so numerous during the past three or four years that they constitute a serious handicap in raising vegetables and maintaining the pasturage in good condition for cattle, and I believe the number should be reduced."

1910 During the month of January some epidemic attacked the deer and the patrolmen found some 50 dead and dying in February and March.

1913 R. E. F. reports deer far too numerous and recommends large reduction.

1916 Owing to killing of large number in the 1915 hunt and the severe winter they are apparently reduced to a reasonable number. Attempts to trap for sale were not successful.

1925 It was voted that not more than 30 deer be shot during the season.

1928 Deer increasing and a larger number should be killed each year.
(W. C. F.)

1930 Not more than 25 to be killed this year.

1931 Requests to buy deer were refused.

1937 19 deer killed.

1939 21 deer killed in the hunt.

1940 Scientists, with the cooperation of H. S. Forbes and W. H. Forbes, have been killing one buck a month to make blood tests and other tests on the growth of horn.

1944 Rules on the killing of deer:

1. The shareholder host must be around when shooting takes place.
2. All deer shot must be reported to Superintendent who will bag and ship all venison that leaves the Island.
3. The season shall be considered closed after January 31st.
4. The limit of deer set by the Trustees shall not be exceeded.

1945 The hunt last fall had to be conducted on a new plan owing to down timber.

1946 Last fall the Fish & Game Commission raised the question of the management of the Naushon deer herd. W. H. Forbes saw the Chief Game Warden and explained the situation of Naushon and its special status under the Act of Legislature of 1789, under which the Trustees have always operated.

The Game Warden took the stand that the revision of the General Laws of the State relating to game in 1941 had wiped out previous laws. The matter is being explored, and until clarified, the Trustees request that no deer be shot on the Island.

1947 Counsel for Naushon has explored the legal status with the State authorities who insist that the revised statutes of 1941 supercede earlier rights. We are, therefore, subject to the State laws. There is a closed season at present on deer in Dukes County in which we are located.

The matter is being looked into in the hope that we may be able to exercise some control over the deer on the Island.

1950 During the winter the Department of Conservation, at our invitation, sent a team to the Island to study the deer. A census was taken and laboratory studies of certain deer made. The Naushon deer were found to be about $\frac{2}{3}$ the weight of those on Nantucket and to have a low reproductive rate. Of range conditions the report said: "Critical conditions such as this have not been observed in any other deer range in the State."

The report recommended that the deer population be reduced to about 50 deer for at least 10 years, and estimated that it would be necessary to take about 125 this year as a start in reducing the herd to the recommended number.

1951 Word got about that we wanted deer to be killed during the hunting season last December and a very large number of poachers, perhaps several hundred, came to the Island to shoot deer. Signs were ignored or destroyed — they landed on every side.

In order to clearly establish our rights and define our position, the Island and its beaches were closed to all visitors and notices to that effect put in the

local papers. Patrols found no evidence of violations during the remainder of the year.

In May 1951 the local papers published notices that the usual beaches would be open to picnic parties as usual.

1952 Vigorous measures were taken to prevent poaching, local posting, newspaper publicity, patrol by professional enforcement personnel, use of 2 Jeeps, boats, 4 walky-talkys and Island members. Poaching ceased.

1953 Special efforts again made to prevent poaching. Chief of the Patrol estimated the deer population at about 200. Authorized hunters took about 15 deer. There were few violations.

1954 The deer were more numerous last autumn than in recent years, the total number taken was 28.

1955 Number of deer continues to increase. Some migration to Falmouth and Woods Hole was reported. The numbers of gunners at the hunt was increased. The Island was again patrolled by men of the Department of Conservation.

1956 Deer population seems to have stabilized. Poachers landed and took 2 and about 30 deer were taken in all.

1957 This year three of the hunt party arrived with bows and arrows. They did not hit any deer but enjoyed the hunting, as did the 19 gunners. As in previous years about 30 were taken by the hunt party, Island, and Conservation personnel.

DEER HUNTS

The custom of having a deer hunt every autumn was established in the early years of the ownership of the Island by Governor Swain and John M. Forbes.

The Hunt became a memorable event in island life, but apart from its significance as a social event it was necessary for the limitation of the deer population. Over and over, through the years the statement is made that the herd seems to be growing, or "This fall it is necessary that we take more than usual for the Island is becoming overstocked."

In the Mansion House Books there is a vast store of information in regard to the deer hunts, the "stands", the numbers killed and, most important of all, who took part.

Rules of the Deer Hunt Adopted by Trustees on September 8, 1912

1. Only shotguns loaded with buckshot may be used. No rifles allowed.
2. The hunt will be divided off into drives. A drive may be described thus: A line is formed by the hunters stationed at intervals of about 100 yds. on "stands" so called, and the beaters forming a line parallel to this "hunters line" at a distance of about $\frac{3}{4}$ of a mile, drive or beat toward the hunters' line until they reach it.

The space between the two lines is called "inside the drive".

3. About 15 or 20 minutes before the beginning of each drive, the hunters will all meet at the rendezvous for that drive, and they will be stationed as quickly as possible on the stands by the captain of the hunt or one of his lieutenants.

The captain of the hunt is expected to instruct each hunter as to the directions in which he may fire, and the exact location of the next hunter—but should he in any case fail to do so, then each hunter is expected to ascertain the location of the hunter next to him on either side, to note carefully the exact direction from his own stand of such locations; and to avoid shooting in either of those directions except in case of a hill of sufficient height to be a safe barrier, or a valley of manifestly safe depth, shall intervene between the stands.

After ascertaining the location of the two nearest stands, he should return immediately to his own stand and remain there till the drive is ended. No hunter shall move more than 30 ft. from his stand when selecting a shelter or hiding place on his stand.

4. The time for beginning each drive is fixed by the captain, before the stands are assigned.

No gun shall be loaded until the first horn of each drive is blown. At the beginning of each drive the beater at each end of the beater's line blows one blast of his horn; and, thereupon, the beaters all begin shouting and advancing toward the hunter's line.

Note: The leader of the beaters may be at one end of the beater's line, or near the center, as he may choose. And he, if not at the end of the line, should blow the starting and the finishing horn on each drive.

In windy weather it is often difficult or impossible for the hunters to hear the horns at the beginning of the drive, and each hunter should therefore wear a watch, and should keep himself informed as to the time set for the beginning of the drive.

5. As the drive progresses, the beaters approach the hunters shouting and striking the trees with sticks, and they are instructed to make plenty of

noise towards the end of the drive, so that when they come within about 200 yds. the hunters may know where they are, and may avoid shooting toward them — i.e., into the drive; and may, after that shoot only deer that have crossed the hunters line, i.e., have passed behind the hunters and out of the drive.

Note: It is impossible to measure distances accurately, or to make inflexible rules . . . but *all* are expected to *bear in mind* that it is of no consequence whether or not the deer escape, but it is of the greatest consequence that no chance of hitting any beater or hunter should be taken.

7. Each hunter must stay on his stand throughout the whole drive, except that if he wounds a deer he may follow it a short distance if it goes directly behind him, but not if it goes toward any other hunter, or turns back into the drive.
8. During the drive the hunters may shoot at any buck or doe that comes within shot, but not at fawns . . . 50 yds. is considered a maximum distance at which it is considered wise to shoot.
9. When two end beaters reach the end hunters the drive is usually completed and the drive is ended by a single blast of the horn or whistle from the captain of the hunt, and by one blast by the beater at each end of the line. This may be repeated if it appears not to have been heard by all.

After hearing this horn any hunter may return to the rendezvous, or may go in the direction in which he has heard others shoot, but *no one is allowed to shoot after the "end of the drive" horn has blown*, except with permission of the captain, when following wounded deer.

10. No shots to be fired at deer before beginning of drive, except with permission of captain.
11. As soon as horn at end of drive is sounded hunters are to take cartridges from guns and not reload until next drive begins.
12. After firing at deer observe the effect, note the spot where it disappeared, and the direction taken. After end of drive hunter should follow tracks to point where it disappeared and wait for beaters and others to come to assist in the search.
13. In following wounded deer, do not go too fast or disturb leaves or ground before experienced trackers arrive.
14. If blood is found anyone there should blow 2 blasts. If dead deer 3 blasts. Call for more help in tracking, 4 blasts. Emergency call, in case of accident or change of plan, 5 blasts.

GAME

1699 It seems almost incredible that in the 17th century pains should have been taken to stock Naushon with game, yet such appears to be the case. In his lease to Caleb Ray and Joseph Ffuller, Wait Winthrop mentions "reserving and saving out of the abovegranted premises . . . one hundred acres of Land where he shall see convenient att the West End of sd. Island for his proper use, Also ffree liberty and privileges for all such deer, wild turkeys, partridges and quails which the sd. Winthrop hath upon the Island . . . together with the increase thereof."

It is not stated that the quail and partridges were introduced, and it is conceivable that they were native to the islands in those days, but knowing how many times they have been brought on in recent times and how rapidly they have diminished and disappeared, it seems hardly probable.

The first definite record of the importation of game birds comes some 150 years later.

1852 W. W. Swain writes in Farm Records: May 1st. Turned out just west of Marys Lake two pairs of California Partridges or quails, sent me by Henry Grinnell. They are about the size of our common quail of darker and more beautiful plumage, each with a single arching feather on the top of the head. They were in good condition and seem a hardy bird. May they thrive and increase abundantly.

May 15th. Turned out just west of Marys Lake five English Pheasants, three males and two females, sent me by M. H. Grinnell. Clipped one wing of each slightly. They were brisk & lively & I hope may prosper.

June 5th. Turned out in the same place, nine Grouse or Prairie Hens received from J. M. F., very tame and gentle, they were brought from Michigan.

I have more faith in their flourishing than in the Pheasants. One grouse of parcel previously brought here from the Vineyard . . . was plainly seen by Mr Lake a fortnight since near the Onkatena bridge.

Turned out in the same place thirteen Shanghai Pheasants sent by R. B. Forbes, (one was dead in the box, the others, all but three, flew strong) they ran off quite well.

N. B. Winter of 1853 (a hard one) and spring of 1854, Pheasants frequently seen.

1854 In August Willard saw at Rattlesnake Neck a brood of 10 or 12 young Pheasants, also the same day on S. W. end of Onkatonka another brood of about the same number.

Mr Lake saw brood of young ones. The summer previous, Sally Russell, (sister of Aunt Lydia Swain) saw some.

Since 1853 [writes J. M. F.] no grouse or partridges seen here, up to about 1870 — an occasional California quail seen about 1865.

1875 Oct. 20. Brought 100 grouse from the West but they died rapidly — turned out 28 here, none seen since. Quails gradually decreasing until none seen this year.

Last year turned out about a dozen California Quails in good order, none seen since.

1879 Oct. 20. Last winter and spring we turned out quite a number of common quail and have heard constant whistling this summer & seen some coveys. Gray squirrels plenty.

1882 Last summer turned out about 100 Messina Quail which seemed to breed but also seem to have emigrated. None seen this summer. Common quail very plenty in spite of gray squirrels which are very plenty in spite of a *home* bounty to our boys of 10¢, under which they have killed about 100 this summer. We need food for quail & have planted a little.

Mr Wirt Dexter says Partridges will flourish here on acorns & will not fly over the water.

1884 No Messina quail seen. Common quail very plentiful and fine tho' a dry year and only a patch of buckwheat and one on Bridge Lot have taken well. Our plans cut short by dry summer.

J. S. Russell, Dr Samuel Cabot & Captain Will Ladd all found quail plenty, especially in Pine Garden. Dr C. has no doubt they eat broom seed & that grouse and partridges will, also. Our North Pine Garden is now accessible by paths, about 80 acres.

We are renewing fence south of (Bowdoin) road chiefly with wire, about 80 acres — and it looks like the best Game Preserve in America.

Mr Cameron thinks heather seed the best for grouse. Some cats in Pines, a few rabbits. Dr S. Cabot says our gray squirrels, now very thick, must be killed or our birds will suffer. I have offered 10¢ bounty. J. S. Russell and other grandchildren earned \$10. already!

I have ordered 50 Prairie Hens and ruffed grouse for this fall & am enquiring about other game.

Oct. 5. Two more partridges came in good order. Saturday, 12 more and 3 more on Monday. 15 were turned out in good order, making 32 or 33 in good order besides 2 weak ones. Among other experiments we have turned out 12 English Pheasants here, some of which have bred, and between 50 and 60 partridges, from which last we have great hopes.

Dr Cabot returned to try the quail and in 3 or 4 days he shot and bagged about 30, taking it very quietly.

Oct. 26. Jim Russell and Fred Coolidge came and they killed, with a

little help from W. H. F. and Malcolm, say, about 40; in all about 62. No nests of English partridges or partridges. No prairie Hens have reached us this season, but some are expected later.

1885 We see few partridges. None that we know of have nested. Some Prairie Hens have been seen in Woods Hole, none here. Quail do not seem so plenty here as last year, though fed and supplied with sheds — about 30 birds killed so far.

1888 Dec. 17 to 26th. Covey of 8 quail seen off launch Ways, 3 quail on Nonamesset east of woods. 1 partridge north shore pasture, 1 near Hathaway Tree.

1889 Jan. 7 to 15th. 1 partridge beyond Marys Lake, 1 south of Mansion House, covey of 15 quail east of Timmy Bridge.

Mar. 4. Covey of 10 at Tarpaulin Cove.

July 1st. 1 partridge and 4 young at Nonamesset.

Nov. 195 quail came in 7 boxes, about 55 dead, 140 left. Some 40 or 50 quail said to have flown to Woods Hole.

Dec. 24. 8 doz. quail came, 10 dead, 86 strong. Of these were turned out, 30 at Deer Hill, 33 at Eagle Hollow, 23 on North Shore.

1890 Saw fox track today near Sam Cabot Tree.

1891 72 quail, 14 dead, 14 grouse, 4 in Trotting Course, 4 in Rye Field.

Apr. Received 6 Prairie Chickens.

1895 Caught this winter (vermin): 78 squirrels, 6 cats, 31 hawks & owls, 16 mink, 1 coon.

To F. W. Eddy: Will pay fare each way; \$2. for every day you hunt; \$10. for every fox you kill. Will supply you with 1 dog. Shall engage you for 1 week and James Cameron will have power to keep you longer if he sees fit.

(Signed) W. Cameron Forbes

Account with S. M. Farmer, gamekeeper: Nov. to Apr. @ \$35. cash, boarding dog @ 50¢ per week & qt. of fresh milk per day & bounties; cats 50¢, rats 5¢, mink \$1. and skin worth \$1., owls & Hawks 50¢, crow 10¢, fox \$10., eagles 50¢.

1896 Jan. 15. Quail for Naushon: 7½ doz. at New Bedford from John Drayton, Chattanooga, Tenn. 12 doz. ordered.

1897

Naushon, Jan. 22nd, 1897

J. S. Russell Esq.

Dear Sir,

The quail arrived on the last train Thursday. I went after them this

morning and turned them out. I found only 6 dead and 3 weak ones. I counted 120 nice smart ones.

Very Respectfully D. C. Look

1897/8 Account of Gamekeeper: Nov. 7 to Mar. 1898

41 trips to Woods Hole

| | | |
|-----------|--------------|----------|
| 4 cats | 0 foxes | 11 hawks |
| 1 muskrat | 66 squirrels | 13 owls |
| 13 mink | 1 coon | 11 crows |

1906 Mr Elton Clark's foxhounds to be tried, for destroying foxes.

1907 June 27. "I got a letter from a Mr Baker about trapping the fox. I was over to the Cove today and there are a lot of fox tracks on the road between the farm and the broom". (R. E. Forbes from W. E. Morrison).

It was reported that 1 fox had been killed by poison.

1909 We have not succeeded in ridding the Island of foxes. 1 was reported in April and 1 in June. I recommend poisoning. (R. E. F.)

1910 No evidence of foxes on the Island this winter.

1917 It was voted to have a closed season on quail.

1920 Quail are doing well.

1922 About 16 foxes have been killed but there are still many on the Island.

NAUSHON GAME ASSOCIATION

The Naushon Game Association was formed by vote of the Trustees with the following subscribers: J. S. Russell, J. Malcolm Forbes, R. E. Forbes, Alice F. Howland, Raymond Emerson, Alexander Forbes, W. S. Hughes, Edith F. Webster, Edward W. Atkinson and W. C. Forbes.

The object being to encourage the propagation of game, especially wild fowl, to make certain protected enclosures & provide feed for land and water birds. To set out wild fowl and to maintain a gamekeeper. It was voted to employ Frederick W. Wood at a salary of \$1300. per year. The following were declared sanctuaries: Marys Lake, Sheep & Harbor Pasture Ponds, Salt Works Pond on Uncatena, Easternmost pond on Uncatena, Duck Pond, Turtle Pond, Cove Pond, Blaneys Pond.

1922 Sheep Pond to be enclosed as breeding place for wild fowl. Pens for duck at the West End Ponds, Kettle Cove, Duck Pond, Mt. Surat and Silver Beach ponds besides those noted as sanctuaries.

1923 Wood seems to be a good man. He has almost exterminated the foxes. Killed 37 cats, destroyed all nests of hawks and raised 360 mallard ducks. Feed has been shipped and planted at expense of Game Association.

1924 W. C. F. reported the destruction of vermin, and setting out of wild turkeys and quail, Hungarian Partridges and duck of various kinds. He reports that a number of woodcock have been seen and they may be breeding.

1925 Wood, the gamekeeper, left to go to Penikese to be Keeper for the Government Game Preserve.

State Dept. of Conservation requested Weepeckets for bird sanctuary. Trustees do not want to give up title.

1926 The Game Association was terminated. 30 or 40 turkeys were reported.

1929 Voted that wild turkeys may be shot east of White Gate Wall and west of 1st Bridge. Woodcock increasing, one brood of 5 was seen.

1931 Turkeys to be killed limited to 25 per year, not more than 2 for each person.

1932 It is reported that quail have entirely disappeared from the Island.

1936 R. E. F. is trying experiment of breeding quail, to be released on Naushon. A supply of northern quail eggs has been secured from a quail-raising farm on the Cape. 3 settings under 3 Bantam hens, which were included in a gift of some California quail eggs, will be tried.

Arrangements have been made to purchase 10 young quail. Some of these to be kept in captivity for breeding, and others released from time to time.

The turkeys are getting wilder, which may account for the fact that few have been seen.

In spite of solid pack ice last winter there is no definite increase in foxes, only one has been seen, and very few tracks.

1937 Experiment of turning out quail has, apparently, been unsuccessful. A gift of 7 quail from Senator F. C. Walcott of Connecticut Fish & Game breeding establishment, turned loose last year resulted in raising 3 coveys. In spite of feeding them the whole lot disappeared, probably flew to the mainland.

R. E. F. has continued breeding them in captivity & several birds have been raised. Seven complete breeding outfits have been bought. The first incubated setting was not successful.

There is evidence of a few foxes. One seen, and 2 holes found.

1938 Owing to failure of eggs laid in breeding pen quail were released

to see whether they could raise their young in the wild state. 7 pairs of quail were released in the east, central, and west regions of the Island.

Two were of the California variety. 4 dozen eggs were purchased of Mr Torrey to be hatched in incubator, and if successful the young quail will be carried through the winter in captivity, a few breeding couples being selected to balance those released in the spring.

1940 A gift of 4 Prairie Chickens was received from the State Game Authorities of Michigan. 3 of the 4 died in captivity, undoubtedly from fighting. 40 quail eggs were incubated out of which 26 hatched and 5 lived.

3½ pairs were turned out and 4½ pairs are still in captivity. No evidence of successful breeding by liberated pairs.

Raymond Emerson has liberated 5 wild turkeys. Turkeys are doing well. Island is free from foxes. Woodcock are seen in normal numbers.

1941 Quail experience same as formerly, unsuccessful. Last of Prairie Chickens died.

1949 Small plots of plants, said to be food for game birds, planted in Glen Elvo.

FISH

1846 The first pickerel ever taken from Marys Lake were caught by Mr Brigham and Dr Fisher.

Four of these fish were brought by Robert Swain from Agawam Pond and put in this, on June 6th, 1843. They now appear to be abundant.

During the year 116 were caught by Messrs Fisher, Brigham, Eddy, Joseph Grinnell, J. M. F., and R. Bennet Forbes.

1863 Oct. 9. Pickerel still plenty in Marys Lake. About last November put in Deerwood Lake a dozen black bass, 2 in. each, got from Mr Tresdales ponds in East Wareham, for which we paid 55¢ delivered here.

1872 Pickerel still plenty in Marys Lake. Black bass scarce in Deerwood Lake.

1874 Have not fished much in Deerwood Lake, caught only a few ½ to 1 lb. bass.

1875 Early in October put 6 black bass from West End Pond [Deerwood Lake] into Marys Lake.

1883 Our black bass in Marys Lake plenty, having nearly worked out pickerel. In West End Pond bass plenty. U. S. Fish Commissioner Morgan

Ferguson found bass too small and thin . . . he recommends giving them vegetable-eating fish, say carp and gold fish, starting them in Blaneys Pond and other small mud ponds.

1888 Fish caught in West End Pond: Aug 21st, Mr Stettinius caught 11 black bass, 1 Sterego bass weighing 12½ lb. Sept. 11th, he and his son caught 18 bass weighing 9 lb. They found a reef below the herring run, about half way to the sand bar landing which runs out from there toward the boathouse.

Oct. 25th. The following fish were sent by direction of Commissioner of Fish and Fisheries: the carp from the Government propagating ponds at Washington, D. C., and the red eyed perch from hatchery at Wyethsville, Va.

The fish were hatched in Aug. 1888. Feeding them should begin by July, 1889. Carp should be fed on refuse from the table, boiled corn meal and beef liver, chopped fine. The carp and perch should be ready to be transplanted to the larger ponds during the summer of 1890.

50 red eyed perch planted in Marys Lake

50 red eyed perch planted in Bulls Neck Pond

200 German Carp planted in Sheep Pond

100 German Carp planted in Rattlesnake Neck Pond

100 German Carp planted in Molasses Pond

100 German Carp planted in Bulls Neck Pond

1932 400 Lake Trout from Marion, Mass. were put in Blaneys Pond and Duck Pond, each on July 7th, 1932. The cost having been contributed.

N. B. The J. M. F. and W. H. F. Game Books and Mansion House and other Guest Books contain much detail concerning Game and Fish.



Chapter VI

FAMILY SKETCHES, HOMES, COMMUNICATIONS, TRANSPORTATION

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

Although my subject is largely confined to factual data concerning Naushon and not to family life, it still seems appropriate to include brief sketches of the lives of those who were closely connected with the Island in the early years of our family ownership.

| | |
|--|--|
| <p>William W. Swain 1793-1858 m. Lydia Russell</p> | <p>Affectionately called "The Governor" and his wife "Aunt Lydia," spent their summers from about 1833 until within a year of his death at the Mansion House. He was an oil merchant, a leading citizen of New Bedford and was in 1833 appointed agent in charge of the Naushon property by the owner, James Temple Bowdoin, who lived in England.</p> |
|--|--|

During these 25 years he and his wife and their only son, Robert, became passionately devoted to the Island and their wish that they be buried here was granted.

In 1834 Governor Swain's niece, Sarah Swain Hathaway, married John M. Forbes, who thus became familiar with Naushon and eventually joined with the Governor in buying it after the death of James T. Bowdoin.

| | |
|---|---|
| <p>John Murray Forbes 1813-1898 m. Sarah Swain Hathaway 1813-1900</p> | <p>Born in Bordeaux, France. Was educated at Round Hill School, in Northampton, Mass. and after graduating entered the counting house of his uncles, James and Thomas Handasyde Perkins in Boston. At the age of 17 he was sent to China where he became junior clerk in the house of Russell & Co.</p> |
|---|---|

He returned home in 1833 and met his sister's friend, Sarah S. Hathaway, to whom he speedily became engaged. They were married at the home of her uncle on February 9, 1834. Within a month he had to leave his bride and return to Canton where he found upon his arrival that he had been made a partner in the house of Russell & Co. He had constant dealings and a warm friendship with Houqua, the famous Chinese merchant.

After 3 years' absence he returned and he and his wife established their home in the "Cottage" on Milton Hill. Here their six children, two sons,

William Hathaway and John Malcolm, and four daughters, Alice Hathaway and Ellen Randolph (twins) and Mary Hathaway and Sarah were born.

His interests now turned to railroads: the Michigan Central, the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy, of which he was president from 1878 to 1881, and others. It was said: "Through the force of his personality the roads in which he was interested acquired a character and stability which distinguished them sharply from most railroads of that day."

He refused all political office but during the Civil War was Governor Andrew's "right hand man" in organizing and financing the Massachusetts regiments.

His interests were wide: the opening up of the West, national and local politics, mining and land development.

Wisdom, generosity of spirit, integrity and breadth of view were shown in all his undertakings.

He loved Naushon, and the development of Island life and activities on simple lines was close to his heart. He improved the forests; he built the roads; he deepened the harbor and he encouraged all enterprises connected with the horses and boats.

He was the bedrock foundation upon whom all depended, and this strength he passed on to his children.

Grandmother Forbes, although brought up in a strict Quaker home, loved gaiety and beauty. She sketched and painted, she not only enjoyed flowers but studied them and compiled a Botany of Naushon. She was by nature a scholar, studied Greek and Italian and was deeply interested in science which she enjoyed discussing with her husband's friends, Prof. Agassiz and Prof. Jeffries Wyman. She was gentle, charming and beautiful.

| | |
|---|--|
| Alice Hathaway Forbes 1838-1917 m. Edward M. Cary -1888 | I suppose that there was scarcely a summer of her 79 years that "Aunt Alice" spent away from Naushon. She always lived at the Mansion House, first with her parents and later with her sister, Sarah. Her married life was comparatively short, and having no children of her own she took all of her nieces and nephews into her affections. The little upstairs piazza over the Chestnut Parlor was built for her. Here in her later years she sat, welcoming the stream of family and friends, old and young, on horseback, by carriage and on foot who came to see her. She united us all by her intense interest in each and every one. |
|---|--|

She and her husband built their house on Bobolink Hill in Milton. After his death in 1888, she spent her life there and at Naushon.

William Hathaway Forbes 1840-1897 Born at the "Cottage", grew up in Milton and attended Mr. Dixwell's School in Boston.

m.

Edith Emerson

1841-1930

At the outbreak of the Civil War he was commissioned in the 1st Massachusetts Cavalry and saw service in South Carolina. In 1863 he transferred to the newly-formed 2nd Mass. Cavalry with the rank of Captain. In July, 1864, during an engagement with Mosby's Rangers, he was captured and was imprisoned — first in Macon, Ga., then in Charleston, S. C., and finally in Columbia, S. C., and was exchanged some 5 months later. In March, 1865 he rejoined his regiment, now with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel and saw heavy fighting. He was present when General Lee surrendered to General Grant at Appomattox on April 9, 1865.

That autumn, on Oct. 3d he married Edith Emerson, daughter of Ralph Waldo and Lidian Jackson Emerson, at her home in Concord.

They built their house next to his father's in Milton and here made the home for their children: Ralph Emerson, Edith, William Cameron, John Murray, Edward Waldo, Waldo Emerson, Ellen (died in infancy) and Alexander.

In the early 1870s he joined his father's firm, J. M. Forbes & Co.

It happened that close by his office his friend, Alexander Graham Bell, was carrying on the experiments which culminated in the invention of the telephone. William Forbes followed these with great interest, and when the two earliest companies, the Bell and the New England were merged in 1879, under the name of the American Bell Telephone Company, he was elected its first president and retained this office until he retired in 1887.

He continued his active business career in J. M. Forbes & Co. and gradually took over from his father the management of Naushon. In 1887 he built the Stone House on the site of his former house, built in 1870.

During the long summers spent with his family he took the leadership in Island activities, riding, driving and sailing. Among the yachts that he owned were the sloop *White Cap*, the cutter *Hesper* and finally the 90-foot schooner, *Merlin*. He enjoyed cruising and sailing and was especially skilled in racing, winning a number of trophies of the New York Yacht Club.

When only 57 years of age his health began to fail. His thoughts turned to Naushon and at his wish he spent the last weeks of his life at the Stone House and died there on October 11, 1897.

His wife's devotion to Naushon equalled his own, and for the following 33 years Edith Emerson Forbes spent summers at the Stone House, surrounded by children, grandchildren and friends.

Her special interest was in her garden and in the flowers around the house which she cherished with infinite care.

Mary Hathaway Forbes 1844-1916
m. Their gay, beautiful daughter spent her childhood and youth with her parents in Milton and at the Mansion House.

Henry Sturgis Russell 1838-1905 In 1863, in the critical days of the Civil War, she married Henry Sturgis Russell. Colonel Russell had a notable war record. When Captain in the 2nd Mass. Volunteer Infantry he was captured in the Battle of Cedar Mountain while trying to save the life of his friend, Major James Savage. After 3 months in Libby Prison he was released on Nov. 15, 1862 and in the following January was commissioned Lieutenant Colonel in the 2nd Mass. Cavalry, in which he served until April 5th, 1864, when he was appointed Colonel in the 5th Mass. Cavalry. At this time J. M. F. wrote: "Harry gave up an easier place in a splendid white regiment, to build up the 5th colored Cavalry." He was wounded while leading his regiment before Petersburg in June, 1864 and received special commendation from General Grant "for distinguished gallantry and good conduct and for his extra capacity for the control of men."

After the war he and his wife lived at "Home Farm" on Canton Avenue, Milton. Their children were: James Savage, Ellen Forbes, Mary Forbes, Howland Shaw and Annie.

Colonel Russell was for two years Chairman of the Board of Police Commissioners of Boston and in 1895 was appointed Fire Commissioner, which post he held until his death in 1905.

In 1893 the Pony Pasture House was built and Col. and Mrs. Russell moved in that summer and spent many of the succeeding summers there.

For ten years after his death Mary Forbes Russell presided over the Pony Pasture with a cordiality, dignity and charm which will never be forgotten by those who stayed there.

John Malcolm Forbes 1847-1904
m. Born at the "Cottage", Milton Hill. He attended the Boston English High School and while there joined the Oneida Football Club, the first football club in the country, now commemorated by a stone tablet on Boston Common. He graduated from the Massachusetts Institute of Technology and in 1871 he became a partner in J. M. Forbes & Company.

(1) Sarah Coffin Jones 1852-1891

(2) Rose Dabney 1864-1947

In 1873 he married Sarah C. Jones at her father's house in New Bedford which was just opposite the Swain House where his parents were married 40 years before. Their first child died in infancy of whom it was recorded: "Saturday, 15th of September, 1877, born at 5 P. M. the first child of whose advent any record has been kept, under the roof of the Mansion House. A boy named Malcolm, well formed and

apparently healthy, although small, 4 lb." They moved into the "Cottage" and here their children, Margaret, Gerrit, Henry Stone, Stephen Hathaway (died young), Ellen and Amelia were born.

From his early years Malcolm was keenly interested in yachts and yachting and was expert in seamanship. He commanded the yacht *Fredonia* in her voyage to Fayal in 1889. He was one of the syndicate which built the *Puritan* which successfully defended the America's Cup, and bought her soon after the race. He later bought the Cup Defender *Volunteer* after her race with the *Thistle*, and sailed her almost daily in Buzzards Bay and cruised and raced annually with the New York Yacht Club.

His wife, Sarah, shared in all his interests. She died in 1891.

In the following year 1892, he married Rose Dabney, whose family had been the magnet which brought the yachts *Rambler* and *Fredonia* in the years 1872 and 1889 to St. Michaels and Fayal in the Azores. There were close ties of kinship and affection which united the Forbes, Jones and Dabney families.

They had three children: Hester (who died in infancy), Alice Hathaway and John Malcolm, born at Uncatena Aug. 9th, 1900.

Malcolm Forbes became interested in light harness horse racing and in 1889 he established the Forbes Farm at Ponkapoag for breeding the trotting horse.

He owned the mare Nancy Hanks and the stallions Arion, Bingen and Peter the Great, the last counted, perhaps, the most famous progenitor of the trotting horse in this country today.

In 1898 he became manager of Naushon and directed the Island until his death in 1904.

His wife and family continued their summers at Uncatena for many years and after the children were married and had established homes of their own, Rose Dabney Forbes made Uncatena a center of hospitality until the 1940s when failing health prevented her from coming to the Island.

| | |
|---|---|
| Sarah Forbes 1853-1917 m. William Hastings Hughes 1833-1909 | Sarah Hughes, outspoken, brusque and infinitely kind and tender-hearted, was her father's constant companion during his later years and after his death she collected his letters and published, in two volumes, his "Letters and Recollections." She also privately printed in three volumes his "Reminiscences" which are of especial interest to the family. |
|---|---|

In 1874 she went to England to study water color painting and there, though her father's old friends, Mr. and Mrs. Nassau Senior, she met many of the interesting persons of the day, Lady Ritchy, daughter of Thackeray, Sir John Millais, Florence Nightingale and Mrs Senior's seven brothers, the

eldest of whom, Thomas Hughes, had recently published his widely known story, "Tom Brown at Oxford".

Sarah Forbes was especially drawn toward the younger brother, William Hastings, whose wife had died, leaving him with the care of four small children whom Mrs Senior had taken under her wing.

In 1886 Hastings Hughes and Sarah Forbes were married and soon thereafter they built their house where they spent the rest of their lives — the house on Randolph Avenue, Milton, now owned by Weston and Alice Forbes Howland.

They had two children, Walter Scott, born in 1888 and Dorothea Murray, born in 1890.

Their summers were always spent at the Mansion House which she shared with her sister, Alice F. Cary.

No biography of succeeding generations has been attempted. The descendants of John Murray Forbes are numbered in the hundreds. Some have apparently lost interest in Naushon, but many have kept their ties with the Island, return when they are able, and whenever they meet they feel the bond which unites them, their Naushon heritage.



NAUSHON FAMILY HOUSES

- | | |
|---------|---|
| 1809/10 | Mansion House built by James Bowdoin. |
| 1870 | Frame house built by William H. Forbes. |
| 1873 | Studio built E. of Mansion House by J. M. F. for S. S. F. burned down in 1907. |
| 1882 | Uncatena House, built by J. Malcolm Forbes, using old farm house for dining room and servant's quarters. Enlarged in 1890. |
| 1887 | Stone House built by W. H. Forbes on site of former house. |
| 1893 | Pony Pasture House built for Mrs. Henry S. Russell. |
| 1897 | Hunting Lodge built on S. E. side of West End Pond at request of James S. Russell. |
| 1899/00 | Uncatena House greatly enlarged and new dining room added to old house. Old farm house, except for new dining room, destroyed by fire, Aug. 26, 1899. |
| 1900 | Uncatena Lodge added to dining room to serve for servants' quarters and kitchen; in 1948 made into separate residence. |

- 1905 Calf Pasture House built by Mrs. H. S. Russell for her children. Occupied by James S. Russell and his family.
- 1906 North Pasture House built by Mrs. W. H. Forbes for her children and occupied by Ralph E. Forbes and his family.
- 1909 Calf Pasture Billiard House built by J. S. Russell.
- 1916 Ridge House built as Community Project. Annex built in 1931.
- 1916 Field House built as Community Project. Latterly occupied by Alexander Forbes.
- 1916 Central House built as Community Project.
- 1916 Shore House built as Community Project. Occupied by Edward W. Forbes. Stable built in 1931.
- 1923 Monsod, East and West Houses built by Amelia F. Emerson.
- 1929 Hadley Cove House built by Henry S. Forbes.
- 1930 Harbor Cottage built for Ruth Forbes Paine (Young) on Goats Neck.
- 1930 Newkit House built by J. Malcolm Forbes on Newkit Point.
- 1932 Veckatimest House built by Dorothea Hughes Simmons.
- 1935 Nonamesset House restored and new ell built by Walter S. Hughes.
- 1947 White Cap Cottage, Army Barracks moved from Billiard Table Road and rebuilt by W. C. F. west of Upper Wharf.
- 1947 Russell Boat House made into small dwelling house.
- 1947 Veckatimest Barn remodelled and made into dwelling house.
- 1948 Lichen Cottage, Army Barracks moved from Mt. Surat to hill south of North Pasture House. Occupied by William H. Forbes.
- 1949 Bobolink Cottage built above Bobolink Wharf.
Summer House of concrete built by Copley Amory, Jr. north of garden.
- 1955 Onawa Cottage built east of Mansion House by W. C. F. Planned as an all season house.
- 1957 Tarpaulin Cove House repaired and occupied by Anne Forbes.
The West End House has been occupied in summer from 1944-1960 by friends of W. H. Forbes, Prof. & Mrs. Robert E. Johnson. They have made some repairs but the house is in bad condition, can hardly be considered a summer residence.



THE MANSION HOUSE

1806-1811 James Bowdoin to William Lee Esq.

James Bowdoin to William Lee Esq. (Paris) Sept. 25, 1806

"... Mrs Bowdoin is desirous of having ye house built at ye Island near the Great Dairy House on the ridge N.E. of the house near where there was a fish flake & Sam Hunt made a seat; this situation commands the Bay and Harbour & Nennimissett and gives almost a complete horizon as far as ye eye can see. I wish the frame and other materials sh'd. be collected as soon as possible & put together in a plain, substantial manner.

The frame sh'd be large and strong and ye windows sh'd be very tight and the frames very strong. Ye winds and ye storms at the Island require an attention to these circumstances.

The house to have no door in front & only one principal one on the side which should be covered with a closed porch on acc't of the N.E. winds, to which it will be exposed."

James Bowdoin to his nephew, Thomas L. Winthrop

Paris, July 21st, 1807

"With regard to house being built at the Island, I have taken no care about it. Mrs Bowdoin is about procuring plans for a small house for a few months residence in summer at Naushon Island. It was intended to be two stories high & about 40 ft. long and the apartments to be laid out agreeably to the plans sent. [I] request you to employ the necessary workmen to erect it as you conveniently can."

The house was apparently finished in 1810 but there is no actual mention of when James Bowdoin and his wife first moved in.

In June 1811 he wrote to the Hon. Judge Cony, "it is now about a week since I came to Naushon but I continue very weak and feeble. I hope, however, that the sweet, secure air of the Island may restore me."

His hope was not realized for after the summer spent at the Mansion House he grew increasingly ill and died there on October 11th, 1811. The story is that he died in the high wing chair which is still in the Bowdoin Room.

It was noted by W. W. Swain: "The old Bowdoin system at Naushon was to have the owner or his attourney occupy the square old Mansion House, thinly built for summer use like a Southern Plantation house, for a few summer months."

According to Samuel Robinson: "I lived on Nonamesset when the Mansion House was built. It was not occupied by anyone except Gov. Bowdoin and his family, during their summer visits to the Island.

I remember it [the death of the Governor] very well; everything was left in the house precisely in the situation they were when the old man died,

his wife and family immediately leaving it . . . the knives and forks rusting on the shelves, the beds and bedding dirty and in great confusion. The house remained in this situation for 7 or 8 years unmolested when Joseph Parker of Woods Hole was authorized to take out part of the furniture. I remember carrying them in the old *Maria Packet* to New Bedford."

1825 Aug. 6. ". . . But the greatest curiosity is the Mansion House. The interior of the building is finished in an elegant manner, and seems but lately deserted. On our entrance, the first thing that met our eye were the conveniences of a well furnished kitchen with plates etc. arranged in *prim* order along the shelves and everything to the most minute article in readiness for the entrance of the family. The drawing room and sitting rooms appeared as though in a state of preparation for receiving company, and the library was well filled with books. In looking them over, it is true that no production of a later date than 20 years ago was to be found to the utter exclusion of Scott and Byron.

A leaf in a work upon chemistry, turned down by the deceased owner, which he laid aside to open the pages of another world, showed the bent of his genius. The furniture was not altogether in the modern style but was rich and expensive. The cellar is stocked with rich wines which have remained untouched. It is kept furnished and in repair, everything as neat as possible."

(From article in *Columbia Centinel*, Aug. 6, 1825).

1833 William W. Swain, after he became agent for the owner, came frequently across Buzzards Bay from his home in New Bedford. As time went on, he spent more and more time at the Island until the Mansion House became his summer home from early spring till late autumn. He and his wife and their son, Robert, were deeply attached to Naushon—the only owners who chose this for their last resting place.

1845 "The Billiard House and wood shed were built west of the house. The house was painted in the spring of 1846 and a second coat put on in 1847 and by the end of the summer it began to look spotted and I [W. W. S.] had a coat of Menhaden oil put on, and this spring it looks well, almost like varnish. In 1848/9 put on another coat of fish oil and another in 1850/51."

1850 J. M. F. added the East Wing; on the 1st floor the Chestnut Parlor and Lower bedroom, and on the 2nd floor the long hall, 3 bedrooms and linen closet. In the basement below the lower bedroom was built the Billiard Room with winding stair leading up into lower bedroom.

1856 West Wing was added. This included kitchen and servant's quarters.

1860 Lava mounting block was placed east of front steps. This was shipped from the Azores, a present from Charles W. Dabney, the U. S. Consul in Fayal to J. M. F.

1864 The flag was hoisted on new hickory staff, in honor of Sheridan's victory.

1880 Present dining room on S. W. corner was built, also tower 12 ft. square, the old west wing replaced by a new wing. Edward Cabot was the architect.

1880-1898 John M. Forbes, his wife and his daughters, Alice and Sarah, with their families, all spent their summers together until his death in 1898.

1898-1916 For the next 18 years Mrs. Cary and Mrs. Hughes shared the house. There were no great changes in the establishment which was always well staffed and kept in excellent condition.

The two sisters died within a few days of one another, Alice Forbes Cary on January 15th and Sarah Forbes Hughes on January 23d, 1917. Their husbands had died many years before.

1917-1959 W. Cameron Forbes, the next Island Governor, began his 42 years occupancy of the Mansion House in 1917. His single-hearted devotion to Naushon and everything that concerned it are known to all.

He invited his sister-in-law, Ellen Forbes, to share the house with him and for the following 37 years, until her death in 1954 she was the Mansion House hostess.

1926 The house was wired for electricity but in order to keep time honored custom few lights were installed except in the bath rooms and the kitchen and servant's quarters. (Ellen once commented to me with a twinkle in her eye, "the guests, being unaccustomed to the dim light of lamps and candles, often took their books to the bathrooms, to read in comfort.")

1945 W. C. F. made drastic changes. The West Wing was moved and completely rearranged, the tower greatly enlarged and many bedrooms added. On the 1st floor the N. W. bedroom was converted into a ladies parlor. The kitchen was changed and modernized, servants rooms were added and there was new plumbing and wiring throughout. There was a new furnace and, to the joy of the children, an elevator was installed. In 1948 and 1954 there were more changes but the atmosphere of the house was, as much as possible, kept unchanged.

1959 After some years of increasing invalidism Cameron Forbes spent, in 1959, his last summer at the Island.

For over 40 years he had filled the house to overflowing with family and friends, and had kept it the center of Island life. The Mansion House was his beloved home.

He died at his apartment in the Hotel Vendome on December 24th, 1959.

THE STONE HOUSE

1871 William H. Forbes built a frame house on the ridge to the west of Hadley Harbor, overlooking both the harbor and Buzzards Bay. Here he and his family spent the following 16 summers.

In 1887 he wrote: "In the autumn and winter of 1885 we decided to take down the house built in 1871 as the family had somewhat outgrown it and the walls and roof needed much attention if it was to . . . keep out the weather at this exposed spot; in fact we have always had some trouble keeping dry in heavy northeast and southeast storms.

We determined to build of stones from the pastures and old stone walls, from which good weather-stained and lichen-covered surfaces could be selected. Inside the (exterior) stone wall throughout, above cellar, is a brick wall with a 2 inch air space between the two. In this way we hope to have a dry house at all seasons and we shall put in a furnace to keep it habitable in winter.

The plans are by W. Ralph Emerson, the builders are Donovan & Flanagan of Boston and the stone work by Watson of Beverly. Part of the old house was taken down in the spring of 1886 and the rest moved back to the north and used as a boarding house for the workmen.

Work was begun in May, the house being under contract to be finished by May 1st, 1887. The new house was ready for occupation at the end of the first week in July . . . and on the 9th of July we moved in, bag and baggage."

1887-1897 William H. Forbes and his family spent ten years at the Stone House.

1898 His wife, Edith Emerson Forbes, continued to spend the summers here with her family until 1930.

After her death, Ralph E. Forbes moved from his North Pasture House and occupied the Stone House until 1937.

1938 Elise C. Forbes spent some summers here but eventually moved back to the North Pasture.

During the last 25 years various members of the W. H. F. family have occupied the house. It has in recent years been used for longer or shorter times by the younger generation and their friends, and latterly has been taken by friends of the family as well as relations.

When the *Hesper* was dismantled her mast was erected on the lawn in front of the house for a flag pole, and still is in use (1960).

UNCATENA HOUSES

1882 J. Malcolm Forbes built a cottage south of the old farm house. The latter, which was always called "The Little House" was used for dining room and servants quarters, kitchen and laundry. In the cellar was the huge old center chimney, which was used as a wine cellar.

1890 The main house was enlarged and 3d story rooms added.

1899 A new large dining room was added on the south side of the Little House and very great changes were made in the main house. The east half was entirely rebuilt and the Tower Room added. Also a new stable was built.

The changes were completed and the family, which had been staying at the Stone House, were about to move in when on the evening of Aug. 20th, 1899 an explosion occurred in the barn, caused by spontaneous combustion of painters' rags. The barn was full of hay and burned like a torch; the Little House was soon in flames and in spite of the bucket line from the beach it seemed that the main house was doomed. All of the brand new carpets were ripped up and hung on the roof, soaked with water to prevent the sparks from catching the shingles. A change of wind and the arrival of the *Wild Duck* with Malcolm Forbes on board, who proceeded to take charge, and the combined efforts of the crews of the *Volunteer*, *Merlin* and *Wild Duck*, also the farm men and help from the mainland finally succeeded in putting out the fire. The Little House was destroyed, except for the new dining room which was blackened by smoke, but otherwise undamaged. The fire did not reach the Main House.

1900 The Main House was put in order and a new house, now known as the Uncatena Lodge, was built onto the dining room. A new barn was built northerly from the Lodge.

On Friday, July 13th, 1900 the Malcolm Forbes family moved in.

1904 J. Malcolm Forbes died on February 19th, 1904. Rose D. Forbes and family continued to spend the summers at Uncatena and the *Volunteer*, which always seemed part of the Uncatena establishment, was kept in commission until 1906. The younger members of the family were married and moved off but Mrs. Forbes stayed on until the early 1940s.

1948 After World War II, changes were made in the two houses so that each became a self sufficient unit. In the Uncatena House the East Parlor was made into a dining room and the room to the north of it was made into a kitchen.

The Lodge was made more comfortable as a complete dwelling house.

A new barn, the third since 1882, was built in the low land northwest of the Lodge.

1957 During the several hurricanes the barn became deeply flooded and in 1957 it was taken down and a small portable type of barn erected across the drive just west of the Lodge.

The Boat House on the wharf, built in 1882, still stands just as it was first built, although the wharf has been changed and rebuilt several times.

1929 Henry S. Forbes built his house at the head of Hadley Cove on the southwest end of Uncatena. He also built a barn and a wharf.

1930 J. Malcolm Forbes built a boat house on the north shore of Hadley Cove for storage of the Newkit boats. This is also used by the Uncatena family for storage.

WEST END LODGE, SOUTHEAST OF POND

1897/8 At the suggestion of J. S. Russell, J. M. F. built a "shanty for hunting at the West End Pond. Dimensions were 16 ft. x 12 ft., one chimney with open fire, no closets or sheathing. Guess \$50. for the job." (J. M. F.)

The Lodge has had considerable use for camping out and hunting parties; it was later somewhat enlarged.

PONY PASTURE HOUSE

1892 In October, 1892 J. M. F. wrote: "We are today exploring a place on the Pony Pasture for building a house for Mary and Harry Russell, and shall probably fix upon the rock just north of the Bath Road and northwest of the Calf Pasture Meadow.

Saturday Jim Russell came with Mr Henry Richardson, the architect, to inspect house lot for the proposed new house. A very cold blustery day with snow squalls."

1893 "The feature of the summer's campaign here has been the opening of Colonel and Mrs Russell's new house at Pony Pasture — completing its grading and improving the road between it and the Mansion House by widening the old road, cutting down many trees to let in light at night, and completing a sidewalk and some stepping stones on the lawn."

Colonel Russell died in 1905 but Mrs. Russell welcomed her family and

friends on the broad south piazza of the Pony Pasture House up to her last summer at the Island in 1916.

Since then the house has been occupied from time to time by her children and their families.

1941 Her daughter Mary, Mrs. Copley Amory, had used the Pony Pasture most frequently and in 1941 she made extensive repairs and had the grounds put in order. For the succeeding 10 years she and her family spent most of their summers there.

After 1950 neither she nor her husband felt equal to Island life and the house was turned over to the Trustees. It has since been taken by various members of the family and by non-family friends. The current (1984) lessees are Jim and Buffy Colt.

CALF PASTURE HOUSE

1905 Mrs. H. S. Russell built the house in the Calf Pasture Meadow on the shore of Lackeys Bay. This house was occupied by James S. Russell and family since it was finished in 1905 and has been taken by members of his family ever since his death in 1951.

NORTH PASTURE HOUSE

1907 Mrs. William H. Forbes built the house on the open hill near the north shore, west of Rattlesnake Neck, in 1907. It was occupied by Ralph E. Forbes and family until 1931, at which time he moved to the Stone House.

After his death in 1937 his wife, Elise, moved back to the North Pasture and it has been occupied for many years by his family, and in more recent summers, by friends.

1960 Its most recent tenant has been the Ward I. Gregg family.

COMMUNITY ESTABLISHMENT

1915 Voted; that the Trustees, in accordance with the request of K. G. T. Webster, Charlotte G. Forbes and W. Cameron Forbes, executive Committee of the Naushon Island Community Establishment, hereby

1. Approve the articles of agreement signed by Edward W. Forbes, Amelia F. Emerson, Edith F. Webster, W. Cameron Forbes and

Ralph E. Forbes, submitted in said letter to be spread upon the Minutes of the Trustees.

2. Allot the First Bridge Site as described in this letter and shown upon the map submitted. (Here is described the site west of First Bridge comprising the tract now occupied by the Shore House, Central House, Field House, and Ridge House).
3. Approve the construction on this site of the four abovementioned houses.
4. Allot a site for a proposed stable . . . situated in the harbor pasture north of the wall from the Upper Wharf to the Mansion House stable.

1916 The houses were designed by George Shepard and were ready for occupancy in the summer of 1916. As World War I was going on in Europe, many of the men of the family were in training in the various branches of the armed services.

The Shore House was taken by Edward W. Forbes and has been his summer home, with occasional absences, from that day to this.

The Field House was occupied by Alexander Forbes, was used by others for a few seasons, but for many years has been his.

The Ridge House was first taken by the Raymond Emerson family, and then by Alice F. Howland who in 1930 built the small annex to the north of it. Of late years it has been taken by David C. Forbes.

The Central House was first used as a community dining room and service quarters, all the families dining there together. As time went on and each family became self sufficient, the house was taken for longer or shorter periods by family and friends.

1931 Edward W. Forbes built a stable northeast of the Shore House for his own use. In the 1940s he discontinued this stable and transferred his horses to the Community stable which now services all four Community Houses.

This stable has recently been used, to some extent, for storage.

COMMUNICATIONS

Loco Motion

by W. W. Swain

"The theme is motive power, from childhood's morn
 When muscular development is born
 'Till all the laws of nature work his will
 Obedient to the mind's o'ermastering skill . . .

Ruler on land, he next by slow degrees
 Strove for the empire of the neighboring seas;
 With a frail skiff first crept along the shore
 His timid progress won with laboring oar,
 Then prayed the Saints to lend a favoring gale
 And spread from Cape to Cape th'adventurous sail.

* * * *

(Then) Lo! slow sliding past the wooded shore
 A phantom ship with neither sail nor oar
 Holds on her course in spite of adverse tide
 Fulton's great triumph and our country's pride
 Fulton and Watt! names graved on History's page
 Their genius revolutionized the Age.

* * * *

The maximum of motive power attained,
 A noble triumph yet for "Morse" remained
 Th'electric spark, subservient to his will
 "Girdles the earth" while Time itself stands still.
 Thus has th'inventive Saxon Race
 All but annihilated Time and Space.

* * * *

And still no pause! Who doubts that we may soon
 Make friendly visits to the neighboring moon
 Condensing first a stock of bottled air
 Enough to last while we are stopping there,
 Or that, the locomotive grown too slow,
 Shot through a hollow tube we next shall go
 Propelled by fifteen pounds per inch, or so.

* * * *

Hail motive power! Ye locomotive hail!
 Hail Genius of the Age! through Nothing take
 "The Nobodies for Everybodies sake."

(Written in the Mansion House Book by William W. Swain in 1855.
 This is an extract from a long poem describing human and scientific growth.)

J. M. F. records:

1856 "In July Naushon was connected with the Mainland by a submarine cable across from Woods Hole to the east end of Nonamesset, by the Cape Cod Telegraph Company.

Aug. 23d. A battery was put up in the N. E. parlor of the Mansion House and the connecting wires brought into the room. Thus a communication became established and messages sent and received to and from Woods Hole, Edgartown, Boston and New York. The former proprietors of the Island little dreamed of Boston being heard from in one minute's time. What will Mr Bowdoin's ghost say to this when he revisits his former home?"

CABLE AND TELEPHONE

1864 "Sheridan's victory of the day before (19th of October) was kindly announced to us by Mr Richards of the American Telegraph Company."

1878 The battery brought us the first message across the Atlantic. The cable only lasted a few months, however."

N. B. The original telegraph instrument is still (1960) to be seen in the Mansion House.

1887 "The cable across Woods Hole (owned by the Signal Service Dept. of the Government) and its poles and wires somewhat disfiguring our Island has won our gratitude for practical usefulness, if it never does another days work for us.

(J. M. F. here refers to the use of the telegraph at the time of the sudden illness of his daughter, Sarah).

Two days ago I had given the Western Union permission to use our shores for landing another cable near that of the Signal Service."

1888 H. H. Dinwiddy asked permission to run a telegraph line to the West End. Frank Peterson was at the West End from 1898 to 1904. As he was a Telephone Lineman he probably constructed the line during those years.

1898 J. S. Russell from John Balch

Boston, May 9, 1898

Dear Jim,

I sent the following order: "Please ship 3600 ft. submarine telephone cable, 4 conductors of 3 strand 320 copper wire insulated to 8/32 with rubber, juted and armored with W & M gauge armor wire. It is understood that you are to give a guarantee on the life of this cable for 5 years (though not against external injury from abrasion). The weight is 1100 lb.

Yours John Balch


Oct. 20. It took about 3400 ft. to lay the connection; the remaining 200 ft. was kept for possible repairs, the 3600 ft. weighed 5500 lb.

1907 A telephone exchange was set up at the Farm House. The Farm now serves as Central Office for: Mansion House and stable, Pony Pasture, North Pasture, Upper Wharf, Capt. Olsen's, Bobolink Wharf and Stone House and stable.

1908 Extract from letter of H. G. Haddon, Pres. Marthas Vineyard Telephone Company:

"I have made an examination of your submarine cable between Penzance and Ucatena which has been interrupted for over a year.

I find that the shore end of the cable at Ucatena is damaged beyond repair, also the shore end at Penzance, for a distance of 250 to 300 ft. from either shore, caused by ice and the chafing on rocks. The middle section is, apparently, in good condition and should last for some years if not disturbed. The cable is estimated to be about a mile in length, consisting of 4 conductors. If 2 conductors are sufficient I would recommend having made 700 ft. of 2 conductor cable protected by heavy armor, say about No. 6 wire. The armor on present cable is not heavier than No. 9 and is altogether unfit to contend with the rocky bottom on the shores, unless it were possible to bury the cable outside of the low water mark."



1911 In this year the telephone was extended to Ucatena.

1915 Letter from William Driver to R. E. Forbes

"I wish to acknowledge receipt of letter, June 1st, accepting our offer to lay cable between Penzance and Island of Ucatena. Spec. to be 3 quads, 6 pair, 16 gauge, heavy lead covered, armored with No. 4 wire, F. O. B. New Bedford. Will advise you probable date of shipment.

1915 The Trustees voted to accept the agent's (R. E. F.'s) recommendation of an extended telephone line and telegraph service to the West End of the Island, provided a suitable arrangement with the U. S. Government can be made for payment of rent by said Government for the use of the line. Rent for the use of said line being secured by Pasque and Nashawena and probably by Cuttyhunk islands."

N. B. The service extended only to Pasque and Nashawena and never to Cuttyhunk.

In a report to the Trustees on Sept. 9, 1915, R. E. Forbes wrote:

"During the past year the problem of the cable across Woods Hole and the telegraph line up the Island has been a perplexing one. I have, with the help of Cameron, corresponded with the Government officials and the Pasque Island Club and with the Congressman for that district, and with Edward and Waldo (joint owners of Nashawena).

Last June, finding that if we waited for the Government to act we should have nothing done this summer, I had a cable laid at our expense. We have been passing a few messages over the cable for the Government without having any arrangement with them about charges. Both Pasque and Nashawena have agreed to pay us \$20. per month each, for the summer months, when we undertook to keep the line in repair and working order for their benefit just this year.

1916 It was proposed by the Chairman (W. Cameron Forbes) that a telephone company called "The Elizabeth Island Telephone Company" be incorporated, the Trustees of Naushon owning the shares. The plant is already here, thus no money to be invested now; but a small switching charge to be paid to the New England Telephone & Telegraph Co. by said Company, and the capitalization be placed at a figure which represents the cost, or a fair appraisal of the value of the present installation owned by the Trustees.

1917/18 This incorporation was accomplished.

1924 Extensive repairs and renewals were made on the line to the Cove and West End.

1925/6 The Trustees approved the installation of a new automatic system for the Island. This, however, was not to include the Cove and West End which would still have to be manually connected at the Farm House.

The installation was made by the New England Tel. & Tel. Company.

1928 It was pointed out by owners of land on Penzance that Naushon had never obtained a permanent right either to land our cable on the shore or to use the land for underground wires.

An agreement was made with Franklin A. Park upon whose land the cable is to be transferred, for an underground conduit with a permanent right for the Elizabeth Island Telephone Company to land the cable upon his property and across it, to connect with the cable of the N. E. Tel. & Tel. Co. on the property of the Penzance Trustees.

1928 "The new cable which is to be put in will have 54 wires in it and without any further payment the Naushon Trustees are to have the privilege of the use of 5/18ths of that number, or 15 wires. This will probably care for all expected future needs of the Island. If at any time the Naushon Trustees should desire to use more than their proportional share of the 54 wires the contract with the Penzance Trustees provides that by paying an extra share of the cost of laying the conduit, that we should then have the privilege of use of such additional wires as we might want.

It is believed that this trade is advantageous and puts Naushon in the

position of having permanent approaches for its wires to the mainland on reasonable terms, to an extent that will provide for all probable future needs.

It is to be noted, however, that *this is only for telephone wires and does not provide for electric light wires or wires used for power purposes.*

In December it was voted to rebuild the telephone lines up the Island to the West End, 1420 lb. of wire, 208 chestnut poles etc.

The line to Uncatena had also to be partially rebuilt.

1930 There is at present a cable holding 6 pairs of wires and one Phantom and one Ghost line. It is not a very satisfactory arrangement.

The New England Tel. & Tel. Co. has submitted 4 plans for consideration by the Trustees.

Plan No. 1 was eventually adopted on Dec. 8th, 1930. It provided for a submarine cable at Penzance Point to the Falmouth Central Office to be rented from the New England Tel. & Tel. Company.

5 circuits in winter months: Jan., Feb., Mar., Apr., Nov. and Dec.

19 circuits in June, July, Aug., Sept. and Oct.

It provides for rebuilding portions of the present plant with necessary wire and cable to arrange 25 main stations on 19 exchange circuits.

3300 ft. 51 pair, 19 gauge armored submarine cable

5500 ft. 51 pair, 19 gauge aerial cables

1.9 miles of 104 (12 gauge) copper line wire

25 chestnut poles, 25 ft., 6 in. at top

1931 Agreement between Penzance Road Trustees & Elizabeth Island Telephone Co. This provides for a total of 20 pairs allotted to E. I. T. Co.

1936 Telephone was extended to Nonamesset House at expense of W. S. Hughes. He has an individual line with permanent construction beyond Newkit. A charge of \$5. per month throughout the year has been made to Pasque Island.

1939 Repairs to the telephone system were necessary owing to Sept., 1938 hurricane.

1941 New line to Tarpaulin Cove and the West End was installed.

1944 The hurricane of Sept. 14, 1944 struck down all telephone and power lines on the Island.

1947 There are 2 submarine cables from Uncatena Point to Penzance, some 3500 feet. The oldest, with 5 pairs of wires was laid down about 1915,

the second, with 52 pairs of wires (20 available for Naushon) was laid in 1930/1.

In December 1946 a break occurred in the new cable 510 ft. from Penzance Point. Raymond Emerson purchased 2000 ft. of cable from the Army surplus @ 40¢ per ft., the current price being \$1.20 per ft. 500 ft. of this was used to replace the broken cable.

1948 The cable to the mainland is now in satisfactory condition and the line to the Cove, the West End and Pasque is now being repaired. It has not been functioning for the last 2 years and was poor before that. It is planned to get it as far as the Cove very soon, and to Pasque by September.

1955 The cable from Penzance laid in 1931 was inoperative after the first hurricane (Carol, Aug. 31, 1954). Examination showed a number of kinks and breaks in the lead sheath and much erosion of steel armor.

The old 5 pair cable fortunately continued in use.

A new 26 pair cable has been ordered. It was delivered in June 1955.

With reel it weighed 11 tons. It was loaded on our barge and about 2 days were required to bolt the stand down and to rig the controls for the safe handling of the cable. The engineers from the Simplex Wire & Cable Co. praised McCaffrey's setting up of reel and controls.

The time selected to lay the cable was when slack water in Woods Hole and a rising tide coincided at mid-morning. All the able-bodied men on the Island took part and important assistance was rendered by Anne Forbes with the *Eel* and Roger Gregg with the *Seal*, and by Kit Gregg, Ralph Forbes and Kit's friend, Oliver Frazier. Capt. Alberts handled the barge (*Whale*) and Mr McCaffrey, the controls on reel. By 11 A. M., three hours after leaving the harbor, both ends of the cable were in place, ready to be spliced.

N. B. We ordered 4300 ft. cable, 26 pairs 19 gauge copper conductors, Polyethelene insulation, synthetic resin jacket, galvanized steel armor 10 gauge wire, Neoprene jacket (tape) over the armor. Weight about 2250 lb. per 1000 ft.

1957 Since Falmouth has changed to the dial system the 1300 series of numbers is no longer available. As a temporary measure we have been assigned to a block of 4000 to 4020 and may keep the final digits as before. In the future a further change to dial instruments on the Island may be necessary.

N. B. Since the 3 hurricanes of 1954 all lines to the Cove, the West End and Pasque and Nashawena have been discontinued and no restoration of the West End service has been planned.

TRANSPORTATION

Canoes, rowboats and small sailboats were the original means of transportation between Naushon and Woods Hole. In order that landing rights on the mainland be secured Wait Winthrop bought a "lott" of land on Parkers Point which has been included in deeds to the Naushon property from 1716 down to the final deed in 1843. However, it was New Bedford, not Woods Hole that was the port of embarkation for the Island.

N. B. A descendant of Joseph Parker of Parkers Point was a relative of Mrs. W. H. Forbes, his name Cotton Parker. When, in 1870, he came from Woods Hole to call he was asked, "Have you any family?" and he replied, "When I put my hat on my head I have my whole family under cover!"

J. M. F. wrote: "When we first went to Naushon the slow and clumsy old steamer *Telegraph* used to stop at irregular hours three times a week on her passage between New Bedford and Nantucket, she hoisting a flag to notify us of having passengers, for whom we sent a boat to meet her just west of the Hole, she rarely in stormy weather coming inside the Ledge.

There was only an apology for a wharf at Hadley and to this she came only when the family went up and down with bag and baggage.

We used to hoist our flag on top of the Mansion House as a signal for her to stop in. Later, when the *Newsboy* succeeded the *Telegraph* the Governor made a great stride and built a new wharf near the bluff at the end of Goats Neck, with a road to it all the way from the Mansion House, and for a time the steamer came in there with, or for, one passenger; but she found it rather close work turning and we ended by building a better wharf at Uncatena."

The Uncatena wharf was completed in 1846 and the steamer *Naushon* came to it for the first time.

1857 J. M. F. built the *Azalea* and the letters and records of the next 30 years are full of descriptions of her fast runs to and from New Bedford, sometimes with only Captain Willard Besse and a boy as crew.

1872 With the coming of the railroad to Woods Hole a new era in transportation began. J. M. F. wrote: "Moved on the 22nd of July, 1872 by the new Woods Hole (Old Colony) railroad, then completed about a week before. Perhaps it may be worth while to recall the circumstances under which the railroad was finally built. The New Bedford steamers had got to feel as if they owned the Bay, and were by no means so obliging as formerly. . . . Just at this time the Cape Cod Railroad offered to extend its branch 16 miles to Woods Hole if they could get the stock needed, subscribed for. Mr (Joseph Story) Fay and I each took 300 shares @ \$70. . . . and the branch was built.

1880 Now the Dude train on the Old Colony, and the Albacore from Woods Hole land us in less than two hours at the Island, with hardly time to read the telegraphic news and discuss the latest gossip in the luxurious parlor car on the way down."

Between 1833 and 1920 the following New Bedford steamers came frequently to Naushon bringing freight, live stock, the family horses and passengers: *Telegraph*, *Eagle's Wing*, *Newsboy*, *Island Home*, *Naushon*, *Monohansett*, *Marthas Vineyard*, *Nantucket*, *Gay Head*, *Uncatena*, *Sankaty* and probably others of whom I have found no mention.

BOATS

For Island transportation from 1848 to 1960 the following boats were built or bought. The first five mentioned were sailboats and the rest, after 1880, were steam launches or power boats. The only exception was the *Onda*, a 20 ft. sailboat built for use of the farm about 1901 and eventually taken over by the Hughes family.

1848 *Westport*, bought for \$50. to replace the old *Vineyard*, sold for \$7.

1851 *Monohansett*, is 20 ft. 6 in. overall, 6 ft. 10 in. wide, 2 ft. 11½ in. deep.

1852 *Fawn*, new sloop 23 ft., 10 in. wide, built by Gurdon Smith, Stonington, Conn.

Following the *Fawn* were 5 sailboats which I have listed as "Yachts" as they all were used for pleasure sailing as well as for Island transportation. They were the *Gypsy*, *Azalea*, *Dart*, *Bonnie* and *White Cap*. After them came the regular Island Transportation boats:

1880-1888 *Albacore*, 40 ft. long, 9 ft. beam, 3½ ft. draft. She was the first steam launch used for trips to and from Woods Hole. After 8 years of service she was destroyed the night the coal pocket burned. On this night, Sept. 26, 1888, William H. Forbes' son "Don" (John M. Forbes) died at the Stone House.

1889-1922 *Coryell*, steam launch 48 ft. long, built at Atlantic Works, East Boston by Myers Coryell, and named for him. In fair weather and foul, for 33 years with Captain Olsen at the wheel the *Coryell* made the trips to and from Woods Hole with never an accident.

1923-1942 *Iduna*, about 50 ft. long. Trim white steam launch. Served the Island well.

1925-1947 *Roamer*, about 35 ft. long, power boat built by Oscar Hilton of Woods Hole on the lines of a fisherman. She was used as an auxiliary to the *Iduna* until 1943 and for the next 3 years was used as the regular Island boat.

1947-1949 *Senorita*, two feet longer than the *Roamer*, she was a picket boat (unused) bought after the war from Palmer, Scott & Co. She had a 55 h.p. diesel engine which was later changed for twin diesels.

1950 *Fawn*, 43 ft. long. She was bought largely through the generosity of James S. Russell who felt the *Senorita* quite inadequate for our use. She came from R. H. Gardner who had used her as an island ferry in Maine. She has ample cabin, as well as cockpit and cargo space and has proved very satisfactory.



SMALLER AUXILIARY ISLAND BOATS

1909-1925 *Shelldrake*, 25 ft. motor boat built by the Atlantic Co. of Amesbury.

1919 *Admiral*, 22 ft. mahogany motor boat for general use. Sterling engine.

1946 *Flight*, 25 ft. Chris Craft motor boat owned by W. C. F. but lent by him as an auxiliary to the regular boat. These small boats are constantly used for extra trips for passengers coming and going to the Island.

BARGES

With the increasing number of houses the problem of handling freight has become greater each year. Before 1910 the New Bedford steamers came in on signal or by appointment several times a year. Since 1920 they have ceased coming in.

1948 Barge *Tautog* was acquired for lumber project and used for 3 years.

1951 Barge *Whale*, 45 ft. x 18 ft. x 6 ft. Built by Dana A. Story in Essex, Mass. She carries coal, gas, grain and all heavy supplies, also horses. While her Murray & Tregurtha outboard engine is unable to stem the Woods Hole current, she has been satisfactory.

YACHTS

The story of yachts owned at Naushon would in itself fill a volume. It does not rightfully belong here, but to the life and summer activities of Naushon.

Here is given only an outline of ownership and a brief description of the larger yachts with only incomplete and scattering references to the smaller craft.

1852-1853 *Fawn*, sloop 23 ft. 10 in. long, 10 ft. beam. Built for W. W. Swain by Gurdon Smith. Cost delivered here \$304.41.

N. B. J. M. F. writes: "The first deck boat that I remember at Naushon was the schooner *Fawn*, about 50 ft. long and 15 ft. beam built for Gov. Swain."

1853-1864 *Gypsy*, sloop 24 ft. 10 in. overall.

1857-1887 *Azalea*, schooner 60 ft. long by 18 ft. beam, 4½ ft. draft. Of her J. M. F. wrote: "When we took possession of the Mansion House in the summer of 1857 New Bedford was our port, and all sail or steam thither the usual means of transportation to the mainland.

We prepared for our new residence by getting R. Bennet Forbes, who was the best authority on yachting in this country, to build the schooner *Azalea*.

The accommodations were one state room, water closet, four settee berths and a very good galley, besides room in the forecabin for 5 or 6 men, which she now has.

Captain Willard Besse was her first skipper, a very competent one.

For many years he and a man or boy would take her up to New Bedford alone in all weathers. In those days we made records of her passages and she made one or two from Uncatena to Palmers Island buoy in 1 hr. 18½ minutes. She proved a capital sea boat and indeed we sent her to Carolina and to Florida in midwinter without danger.

Some 15 years later she was rebuilt and 11 ft. added to her length and two staterooms added."

1864 *Dart*, 27 ft. long. "On Tuesday, 30th August the yacht (*Azalea*) sailed for Plymouth having the dear old *Gypsy* in company, for the purpose of exchanging her for the *Dart*. Malcolm had a great fancy for the *Dart*, so we discarded sentiment and let the *Gypsy* go. She has always been up to the occasion, fast, safe and a splendid sea boat."

1869 *Bonnie*, sloop 23 ft. long, 10½ ft. beam and 30 in. draft. Sold the next year.

1870 *White Cap*, sloop. "Malcolm's pride and delight". Bought by

J. M. F. and sailed by J. Malcolm Forbes and sold to William H. Forbes in 1878 and used by him until 1880.

1872 *Rambler*, schooner, 123 ft. overall, 23 ft. beam, 11 ft. draft. Was bought by J. M. F. for voyage to the Azores and the Canary Islands, sailing Apr. 27, 1872 and arriving back in Tarpaulin Cove on July 15th. During the rest of the summer she was sailed in races against the *Madeleine* and other yachts. She logged 15 knots in one run along the Long Island shore and covered 33 sea miles at an average speed of 13½ knots. She was sold in the autumn of 1872 to Commodore Thomas.

1880-1910 *Hesper*, cutter, 54 ft. overall, 45 ft. waterline. She was built for W. H. Forbes at Greenport, N. Y. by Henry Piepgrass, designed by A. Cary Smith. She was launched May 12, 1880. She took part in many races and was sailed by members of the W. H. Forbes family throughout her long career. In about 1910 she was taken out of Commission and was hauled out at the east end of Nashawena harbor, to be used by the boys for camping out.

Her mast was set up on the Stone House lawn as a flagpole.

1883-1886 *Harbinger*, 70 ft. schooner, built for J. M. F. Designed by A. Cary Smith.

1885-1894 *Puritan*, sloop, 94 ft. overall, 81 ft. 1 in. waterline, 22 ft. 7 in. beam, 8 ft. 8 in. draft. She spread about 8000 sq. ft. of sail. Her designer was Edward Burgess. She was built by a syndicate of Boston men, of whom J. Malcolm Forbes was one.

In the two races for the America's Cup on Sept. 14th and 16th, 1885, the *Puritan*, commanded by Captain Aubrey Crocker, won over the challenger, the British sloop *Genesta*. She was bought by J. Malcolm Forbes on Sept. 23d and was sailed by him in cruises and races until 1893.

1886 *Permelia*, steam yacht, 100 ft. long, 12½ ft. beam, 4½ ft. draft. She was J. M. F.'s first steam yacht, built by Nat Herreshoff. "She was fast but steered badly and was not absolutely safe nor comfortable." Sold in fall of 1886.

1887-1890 *Shearwater*, steam yacht, 129½ ft. by 17 ft. 11 ft., 6 ft. 8 in. draft. Built for J. M. F. and designed by Edward Burgess.

In 1887 J. M. F., with a party of six, cruised in her through the West Indies and into the Gulf of Mexico.

1889 *Fredonia*, schooner about 108 ft. overall. Designed by Edward Burgess for use as a fisherman and built for J. Malcolm Forbes who wished to improve the type.

With Capt. Frank Stone as navigator, and Capt. Harty as sailing master, he sailed in May for the Azores with a party of 12, 8 of whom were ladies, to visit the Hickling and Dabney relations in St. Michaels and Fayal. They returned on July 28th, 1889.

The *Fredonia* was sold for a Gloucester fisherman in 1889/10.

1889-1924 *Merlin*, schooner, 108 ft. overall, 89 ft. 5 in. waterline, 23 ft. 6 in. beam, 9 ft. 5 in. draft. She was designed by Edward Burgess and built for William H. Forbes at the yard of George Lawley. W. H. F. noted: "She is of wood and strongly built." He won the Goelet Cup races in her in 1890 and 1892.

For 35 years she was sailed by members of the W. H. F. family in races and in cruises along the New England coast. Her mooring was in the Outer Harbor, north of the Ledges. Capt. Norton was in command of her for many years and was succeeded by Capt. McQuarrie.

1891-1899 *Wild Duck*, "steel yacht designed to be complete under both sail and steam. Overall length 154½ ft., waterline 125 ft., beam 23½ ft., draft 7½ ft. She is of 280 gross tons and has engines of 400 h.p. and is fully rigged as a two masted schooner. She was designed for J. M. F. by Edward Burgess and built at the Atlantic Works in East Boston. She has 2 Belleville boilers.

Her total sail area (11 sails) is 15,954 sq. ft. To turn her from a sailing vessel into a steamer and back into a sailing vessel takes 11½ minutes.

She has a line of mahogany houses amidships 67 ft. long, 12½ ft. wide and 6 ft. 1 in. high. Its forward part contains a saloon, then dining saloon & Pantry, abaft that the captain's stateroom, then the galley, abaft that the engine room and then a chart room and abaft all, a staircase which leads to the 2 cabins with 3 staterooms apiece, one arranged for ladies.

A gig and a cutter of bright mahogany, Carver built. She is staffed by 13 officers and men."

She was launched June 10th, 1891 and after a trial trip to Maine reached Naushon on July 3d.

During his last years J. M. F. sailed in her frequently, to Florida, the Caribbean and the northwest coast of South America. His last sail was on Sept. 22nd, just 3 weeks before his death on Oct. 12th.

Capt. Olsen wrote: "With regret and deep sorrow I heard the sad news of my good Old Master and Friend, Hon. J. M. Forbes passing away from us forever."

The *Wild Duck* was sold to Gen. F. V. Greene and left Hadley Harbor for the last time on Aug. 3d, 1899.

1893-1906 *Volunteer*, sloop, 106 ft. 3 in. overall, 85 ft. 10 in. water-

line, 23 ft. 2 in. beam, 10 ft. draft. She was built as a Cup Defender by General Charles J. Paine and was designed by Edward Burgess. She was of steel construction, built in the remarkably short time of 66 days by Pusey & Jones of Wilmington, Del.

She spread 9271 sq. ft. of sail.

Under command of Capt. Henry (Hank) C. Haff, she sailed on Sept. 27th and 30th, 1893 in defense of the America's Cup, defeating the challenger, the British (or rather Scottish) sloop *Thistle* in both races.

In 1893 she was bought by J. Malcolm Forbes and, until his death in 1904, he sailed her constantly in Buzzards Bay and in many races and annually in the cruise of the New York Yacht Club. When on board he always took complete command.

For about two years Capt. Haff was her captain and he was succeeded by Capt. Andrew Peterson who remained in charge of her until she was sold in 1906.

She was moored northeast of the Ledges, a few boat lengths south of the *Merlin*.

1909-1947 *Black Duck*, schooner about 50 ft. overall, 46 ft. waterline. She was built for Waldo E. Forbes and designed by B. Crowninshield.

During her 38 years the *Black Duck* lay at her moorings in Hadley Harbor and was constantly used for cruising and sailing in the Bay and the Sound and for teaching the younger generation the principles and practice of seamanship.

1914-1945 *Mangosteen*, bright mahogany power boat designed by Herreshoff for W. Cameron Forbes. She was 60 ft. overall.

1914-1928 *Kalinga*, sloop, 46 ft. waterline, formerly the *Adventuress*, bought by W. C. F. and designed by Herreshoff.

1923-1938 *Sahara*, power boat, 55 ft. overall. Built for Ralph E. Forbes.

1928-1936 *Onawa*, sloop, 12 meter, one of a class designed by Starling Burgess and built in Germany for W. C. F.

1936-1945 *Nautilus*, sloop, 10 meter, built for W. C. F. and designed by Starling Burgess.

1938 *Stormsvala*, ketch, 48 ft. 6 in. built in Denmark for Alexander Forbes, designed by Frederick Fenger.

CAPTAINS OF BOATS AND YACHTS

1857-1876 Captain Willard Besse commanded Yacht *Azalea* and other Island boats.

N. B. W. H. F. states that Capt. Besse retired to Dartmouth in 1896.

1866 Captain Wainright commanded *Azalea* for a short time.

1868 Captain Nymphus Phinney commanded *Azalea* for a short time.

1876 Captain Weeks commanded *Azalea* for a short time.

1877-1886 Captain Cammett commanded *Azalea* and *Albacore*.

1885 Captain Aubrey Crocker commanded Yacht *Puritan*.

1886-1888 Captain Charles O. Olsen commanded *Albacore*.

1888-1922 Captain Charles O. Olsen commanded *Coryell*.

1922-1941 Captain Charles O. Olsen commanded *Iduna* and in 1937 he was appointed Harbor Master. After his retirement in 1941 he continued living in the cottage on Goats Neck and here he died on July 16th, 1947 at the age of 81. He was born in Sweden in 1866 and made his home at Naushon for over 60 years.

1888-1890 Captain Tripp commanded Yacht *Shearwater*.

1889- Captain Norton commanded Yachts *Wild Duck* and *Merlin*.

1890-1891 Captain Collins commanded Yacht *Shearwater*.

1891-1893 Captain Collins commanded Yacht *Wild Duck*.

1893-1899 Captain Strahan commanded Yacht *Wild Duck*.

1898-1900 Captain Haff commanded Yacht *Volunteer*.

1900-1906 Captain Andrew Peterson commanded Yacht *Volunteer*.

-1923/4 Captain MacQuarrie commanded Yacht *Merlin*.

1917- Captain Veeder commanded Yacht *Mangosteen*.

1917-1920 Captain Olsted commanded Yacht *Kalinga*.

1920 Captain Slocum commanded Yacht *Kalinga*.

1928-1936 Captain Bernsten commanded Yacht *Onawa*.

1930 Captain Bosworth commanded Yacht *Mangosteen*.

1936-1945 Captain Hendrick Anderson commanded Yacht *Nautilus*.

1942-1945 Captain David Bosworth of Cuttyhunk commanded the *Roamer*.

1945-1947 Captain Richard Norton of Pasque commanded *Roamer*, *Flight* and *Senorita*.

1947-1951 Captain Norman West of Chilmark commanded *Senorita*.

1951-1952 Captain Norman West of Chilmark commanded *Fawn* and Barge *Whale*.

1952-1954 Captain L. B. Dahlmer of Gloucester commanded *Fawn* and Barge *Whale*.

1954- Captain Richard Alberts of Woods Hole commanded *Fawn* and Barge *Whale*.

IN CHARGE OF BOBOLINK WHARF

Captain Hansen
" McRae

Foster Cunningham

IN CHARGE OF UNCATENA WHARF

1888-1904 Henry Cook (Mentioned as crew on the *Azalea* in 1867 and at the farm in 1877).

1926 Captain Alonzo Fisher.

N. B. The above does not pretend to be a complete list.

TRANSPORTATION

Having considered transportation by sea we now turn to means of locomotion on the land.

Unfortunately not much is known about the oxen on Naushon, except for the fact that in early papers they are often mentioned together with the teams of horses. They came from New Bedford in the small sloops and schooners which plied the coast and brought supplies to all of the Islands. They were probably raised on Naushon, a few yoke a year, and from earliest times there is evidence that horses were bred upon Naushon.

MULES

Curiously enough, it appears that two separate attempts were made to raise mules, the first, by James Bowdoin in 1807 and the second, some 50 years later, by John M. Forbes.

1807 Bowdoin wrote to his nephew, probably from Paris: "I have written for a Jack and Jenny of ye large breed. Please to mention to Mr Bullard to prepare a proper stable, hay, grain etc. for the accommodation of these animals. The getting them off in safety from a vessel where there is no wharf is a nice matter and requires great care and address, not only in well suspending the body in a proper sling, but in having a guy attached to the head of the animal and sustained on shore by a judicious hand, to prevent ye animal from beating his head against ye side of ye vessell.

I believe ye rearing of ye Jacks and Jennys of ye large breed from the very great value of these animals will be a good substitute for horses.

They will cost a great deal of money. I beg that you see that the proper provision is made for the Jack and Jenny and ye sheep so as to put both ye rearing the one, and the other in ye best state of preparation, that suitable buildings should be made.

Tell Mr Bullard to provide himself with some cooling physic in case they should prove costive, as costiveness is ye disease with which almost all animals are afflicted on first going to ye Island.

Whether the Jack and Jenny arrived is not known, there is no further mention of them.

1846 W. W. S. writes: "My mule, 'The Prince' was bought at Baltimore by Thomas Whitridge, said to be 3 years old. His cost is \$100. He arrived in New Bedford, 17th April, 1846, by schooner *Industry*, and at Naushon, May 4th. Prince Albert proved a vicious rascal and was condemned to servitude."

1851 The Malta Jack presented to the Island by R. Bennet Forbes cost about \$300., called 3 years old. (Departed this life to the place where good Jacks go, in spring of 1853).

Bought two mares for raising mules.

1855 July 17th. A Jack was brought on the Island, bought by Mr Horatio Sprague at Gibralta, June 16th and shipped by bark *Tidal Wave*, for Boston.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--------|
| Cost of Jack (\$55.) and expenses | \$150. |
| Board at Boston | 2. |
| Frt. to New Bedford | 3. |
| Custom House Charges | .20 |
| Frt. from Gibralta | 32. |

Entire cost of Jacks \$187.20

July 28, David M. Gifford brought 7 mares on Island for breeding mules;

1 Bay, 6 years

1 sorrel, Lancaster

1 gray, been worked hard, 9 years

1 Sorrel, full blooded, at Bear Gap

1 Brown, nice family horse with sprained knee. Bt. at Schylkiln

1 Dark, tender, nail in foot, from New Bedford

Total cost of mares \$561.55.

N. B. To Island on *Eagles Wing*.

JACK AND JENNY

1855

Horatio Sprague Esq.

Gibraltar

Your favor of the 4th June was duly received. The Jack came safely and in good condition. He is well made, a handsome animal, 51 inches high, but unfortunately, owing to a phlegmatic, Joseph-like disposition he does not perform what was expected of him. He has been offered a variety of mares every day for the past six weeks and the only one he has noticed in the least was a black pony. In every trial since he has seemed profoundly indifferent. This is quite a disappointment to the owners of Naushon as they wish to make a business of raising mules. In order to do this it is important to have a large Jack, not less than 56 to 60 inches high, black color preferred and of good form and temper.

May I ask the favour of you to make one more trial to procure one, any time during the ensuing autumn or winter and pay his keeping until an opportunity offers to ship him as early as possible after the 20th of March next, either to Boston or New York.

It is so important to have a first rate Jack of large size, well broke and kind and young that cost is of less consequence than size and quality.

Mr John Forbes has written his friend Mr Ingraham of the Island of Sicily enquiring if such a Jack is to be found there. If you have not found one, will you ask Mr Ingraham to make the purchase, providing a passage can be calculated on from Sicily direct, or thence to this country via Gibraltar, as early as the time specified. He ought to be here by the middle of May and, if possible, not later than the 10th of June.

It will be well to ascertain beyond doubt that he can perform duty with mares.

Very truly Yrs. John M. Forbes
R. B. Forbes

Copy to Benjamin Ingraham, Island of Sicily

Dear Ingraham,

Yours was duly received and sent to Mr Swain who says, "If the cost is so small, send for 2 Jacks provided they can be found all right and not less than 60 inches high, or if he can get a Jenny of the largest size. We can breed Jacks for sale as well as mules. Get good, big animals and the sale is sure."

"In writing to Mr I. suggest having a strong house built on board vessel for the Jacks, plenty of food and water and every precaution to prevent chafing and to protect them from the weather. Best arrangement is to have them in a sort of harness, breastplate, breeching etc. to keep them steady."

I give you these quotations because I do not wish to have you think I am so great an ass as to suppose I know more about the matter than you do, and also to prevent my being bullied by John and the Governor, in case they get an impotent Jack like the last one, or one that can't stand starving on the Island.

Trusting that you may find 2 Jacks or a Jack and a fine Jenny,

I am Yrs Sincerely

R. B. Forbes

J. M. F. wrote again about the 25th of April to Mr Ingraham and also to Mr Sprague for a Jack, even if of less size than described, to be here by July 1st.

HORSES AND PONIES

Horses and ponies, perhaps even more than yachts, belong to family life and may not be appropriate to this volume, yet their names and memories will soon vanish if they are not recorded. Therefore I include this resumé fully realizing that it is incomplete and quite inaccurate.

1833-1864 No pony was more celebrated in the early days in story and song than the little French pony Johnny Crapeau.

Johnny Crapeau, pony *mare* was brought from France by Capt. Caleb Anthony in the ship *Poland* in 1833. "This jolly little French pony was delicately and out of compliment to her pluck and spirit complimented with the manly, not to say froggy name and was always called HE though really of the weaker sex. SHE was brought over in the *Poland* in 1833/4 and was supposed to be about six years old then.

He was about as large as a big dog but strong as a lion and often carried grown-up men.

The writer's first recollection of him was in 1834 when Joseph E. Grinnell rode him to the West End cottage & old Uncle Stephen Robinson held up

both hands in amazement and said, 'Father Abraham! why don't ye get off and carry the poor little Hoss yourself!!!' "

Johnny was Aunt Lydia's favorite palfrey and knew the by-paths as well as she did. He could open any common gate. Whenever a riding party got lost Johnny was always ordered to the front & his little head at once turned the right way he trotted off as surely right as the crow flies.

All the children of the family learned to ride upon Johnny and few got their experience without sundry falls which Johnny, in his innocent fondness for a bite of grass, brought them to, putting his head down in spite of their little hands.

He was very hearty, and got his living in the woods all winter and came in fat and well in the spring.

His last rider was James Savage Russell in the summer of 1864, then 5 months old, while Johnny was not less than 35 years. Soon after this Johnny disappeared from the pasture, being last seen near the White Gate, but as the hook was fastened and as no trace of HIM could be found by Willard Besse and other faithful friends, it is evident that Johnny has gone aloft!"

1834 Di Vernon and the Judge.

1837 Kate and Xarifa.

1846 Cinderella, Prince and Bob Logic.

1847 Rosabelle and old Nantucket.

1848 Fanny, together with pony wagon, harness, saddle & Bridle, cost \$75.

1849 Arab, presented to Gov. Swain by Dr. Robbins. She belonged to Edward N. Perkins and the Dr. says she is high bred, the sire an Arabian horse now owned by Mr Pingree of Salem, a present from the Bey of Algiers (Immam of Muscat), the dam owned by young Sam Eliot.

1852 Bought 2 mares for raising mules, one a sorrel called Kate. J. M. F. bought one for the same purpose and good for nothing else — and not for that! Bought Gypsy, pony mare 4 years old, came from Louisiana, had her of a Rochester man who drove her in a wagon, sometimes 20 miles a day, kind and gentle, paid \$65 for her.

1853 2 grays, both old and 1 useless

1 sorrel, Island bred

Countess, Island bred

1 old Bay

1 Forbes mare, good for nothing

2 roan work horses

2 mule colts

1862/3 Horses to winter on the Island

| | | |
|---------------|----------|---------|
| Shuckle | Flirt | Jessie |
| Mule | Rob Roy | Baron |
| Stranger | Frolic | Zencara |
| Countess | Minette | Trojan |
| Fanny Wharton | Harold | Quebec |
| Marmion | Dutchess | Sapho |
| Perugia | Annette | Folly |
| Bellona | Rackette | Elsie |
| Scad | Blanche | |

1865-1871 At Mansion House stable: Bayadere, Dan, Graylock, Erl King, Hunter, Ranger, Moss Trooper, Redslayer (from California).

1871-1887 The following were either at the Mansion House or Stone House stables: Norma, Brewer, Pilgrim, Fearnought, Java (Shetland), Dolly, "A good little Morgan Mare, who lived at "Bush" (the home of R. W. Emerson in Concord) for 20 years. She was much loved by the family and made fast friends, although herself of a conservative temperament. At 25, being judged too old for further work, a home at Naushon was offered her where for 2 years more she carried light loads and did some service in the saddle. On August 1st, 1875 when trying with ill judged impetuosity to run through a gate, she was injured and could not recover. A boulder marked D in Abrahams Bosom marks her last resting place."

1887-1900 At Mansion House stable: Jock, Hall Mare, Hilda, Pulaski, Comet, Queen of Trumps, Troubadour, Billy Cricket, High Flyer, Hercules, Don Quixote, Uncle Sam, a big rangy bay, strong and wilful, found dead on Nonamesset after many years on the Island, Sancho Panza, fat cream colored pony, the first mount of Dorothea Hughes, very gentle and much used for guests.

1887-1900 At Stone House stable: Raven (When en route from New Bedford kicked a hole through the side of the *Monohansett*), Zita, Red Wing, Iolanthe, Mexican Rat (Cheyenne pony), Sue & Kate (New York mares), the gray pair, Norman and Frenchman, Jim, Flash, Beda (Edward Forbes' Arabian stallion), and Crazy Jim, W. C. F.'s polo pony, Nellie Blaze and the Shetlands, Nellie Bly and Donald.

In about the year 1899 members of the W. H. Forbes family bought the Beckton Ranch, some 10 miles west of Sheridan, Wyoming. From that time to the present, western horses and ponies have been coming to Naushon. There was a large shipment about the year 1900.

1900 At the Stone House stable were added to those above mentioned: Pinto, Go Lightly, California, Greasewood, Carlisle, C. R., Bobadilla (Bally-

hack) and finally the dark brown, sturdy, ambitious pony Alfalfa, for many years the favorite of Edward W. Forbes.

1900-1930 At Stone House and R. E. Forbes stables: Mavourneen, beautiful little dark bay driving mare often driven by Mrs. W. H. Forbes in her basket phaeton, Killdeer, Mojave, Mambrina, Pecan, Petrel, Isinglass, Hecla, Karnak, Luxor, Ladore, Martini, Moses, Junco, Una, Upidee, Ultima, Quito, Quince, Useful, Upstart, Lincona, Olive Fraser and Question.

And perhaps later than 1930: Lancewood, Nectar, Yard Arm, Sonata, Yuma, Tamarind, Ursula, Virginia, Kansas, Beltane, Casper, Chester, Crusader, Claudine, Darien, Delmar, Quentin, Obeya, Live Oak, and the Welsh ponies: Juno, Inimo, Onawa, Portlight and Pearl.

It was the practice of R. E. Forbes to name all the horses bought or raised in a given year with a name beginning with the same letter of the alphabet.

1915-1930 At Mansion House stable, owned by either W. Cameron Forbes or Ellen Forbes: Squails, Squibobs, Terence, Lalage, Bellringer, Breastplate, Apache, Ellen Forbes' favorite calico pony which she rode for many years, Florina, the pony on which Amelia Forbes learned to ride, Jellico, the big chestnut, favorite of W. C. F. and greatly enjoyed by General Pershing when staying at the Mansion House, Katrina, Roustabout, Blackamore, Pacita, Paleface, Dundee, Norman, Ace High, Quicksand, Waffles, Cherokee, Jack Frost, Lady Bird, Akab, Lassie, Nippy, Fantail, Tarlac, Starling, Postum, Zippy, Squire, Ginger, and Ted.

1930-1959 At Mansion House stable: Leap Year, Ghost, Bell Boy, Frisk, Zerida, Gansa, Tiny Tot (huge white carriage horse), Mindoro, Lily Vale, Juanita, Miguel, Gosling, Red Seal, Woodford, Twilight, Pixyman, Joyeuse, Cloudy, Meteetsee, Bemeret, Benderspree, Mark Twain, Titwillow, Mayfair, and the big chestnut Canadian pair, Mango and Lacatan, so greatly enjoyed by W. C. F. in his latter years. He sent many of the family to drive with them, with Peter Bundy at the reins.

At Shore House and Community stables, owned by Edward W. Forbes: Ranger, splendid pony, took the place of Alfalfa for many years, Kelly, Geraldine, Copal, Happy Time, Undine, Rocket, Quicksilver, Starnina, Aladdin, Andante, Merrymin, Sunshine, Susan, Wampum, Spot, Creole, Rock Salt, Dixie, Mohawk, Morning Star, Zephyrus, Hopeful, Sandarak, Westwood, and Fanita.

Some of the above may have been shared with Alexander Forbes.

Before 1900 at Uncatena: Independence, Bruno, Houghton, Tamarack, Dandy, Grayling and the two small ponies on which Ellen and Amelia learned to ride, Jackanapes and Nellie Bly.

From the Forbes Farm in Ponkapoag came the mares Genesta, Ollie K, Pandora, and Tonga, the incomparable daughter of Bingen, the perfection of light driving mares. Last but not least, Bingen, prized by Malcolm Forbes not less for his beauty and speed than for his gentle disposition.

1900-1930 Wall Eye, Sage Brush, Kittiwake, the most sensitive and delightful pony ever ridden by A. F. E., C Bar, all from Wyoming, Six Shooter, Kim, Meg, Zuni, Malcolm's pony on which he learned to ride, Pedro, Vulcan, Wild Honey, Black Peter, Prince and two Fayal donkeys, names forgotten.

James S. Russell's cherished horse was Dexter. The story is that his Grandfather (J. M. F.) commissioned him to go down to Virginia and select for him the best horse he could find for both driving and riding. He went, chose Dexter, and brought him to the Island and asked his Grandfather if the horse suited him, "Yes" J. M. F. replied, "He is just the horse I was looking for, he is yours!"

The black and white pony driven by Madeleine Russell is familiar to all.

Except for Dane and Rimrock at Newkit, the stream of horses that have passed through the other Island stables is not here recorded.

As carriages are becoming obsolete, it may be of interest to recall the names of those commonly used, to be found in the various Naushon stables:

| | |
|----------------------|------------------------------|
| Depot wagon (closed) | Goddard Buggy (with top) |
| Beach wagon | Carryall |
| Box wagon | Dog Cart |
| Democrat | Meadowbrook Cart |
| Waggonette | Double carriage (for pair) |
| Basket Phaeton | Light buggies and Pony Carts |
| Concord Buggy | of various kinds. |

On the farm, two wheel carts, 4 wheel carts and express wagons were used and a pair always used for heavy hauling. Of course all plowing and heavy farm work was always done with a pair of heavy farm horses, and a good pair often lasted for 15 or 20 years.

1908 To those unfamiliar with the fine art of horse shoeing this letter from the blacksmith, Daniel D. Scott, to E. W. Forbes may be of interest.

"I offered to shoe the farm horses for \$2. per set. . . . I did not include the horses belonging to the families. There is no comparison between a road and a team horse as regards the work required. . . . Many of the family horses wear barred shoes, side and toe sets and other kinds of weights. To properly adjust these different kinds of shoes requires the finest judgment. It is necessary to have 2 men a fitter and a driver. I could not send you a fitter who could drive on shoes. . . ."



Chapter VII

U. S. ARMY, OCEANOGRAPHIC LEASE, WOODS HOLE PROPERTY

ARMY INSTALLATIONS

1775-1779 During the Revolution there was active fighting on and around Naushon, and fortifications were erected on the northeast side of Tarpaulin Cove and north of the beach. Some cattle and sheep were taken by the British who used the Cove as a rendezvous until it was occupied by a Company of Militia from Falmouth. Barracks for 75 men were erected in 1776.

1812-1814 Likewise in the War of 1812 there was great naval activity in Buzzards Bay and Vineyard Sound and British ships were in the Cove very frequently, but there were no installations on the Island.

1861-1865 The Civil War did not immediately affect the Island although all normal activities were curtailed. At one time the Island was mortgaged by J. M. F. to secure money for the equipment of the Massachusetts troops and other war financing.

1914-1918 During World War I there was fear that the seaport towns might be attacked by German submarines which destroyed considerable shipping along the New England coast. No steps were taken, however, to defend or protect the Elizabeth Islands.

1941-1945 In World War II danger seemed imminent. The whole coast line was equipped with radar installations and listening posts. These were established on Naushon and Nashawena and small detachments of troops stationed on both islands.

The *Boston Herald* reported on July 20th: "Film star James Cagney and W. Cameron Forbes, former Ambassador to Japan, . . . turned over 6500 acres of land on Marthas Vineyard and Naushon Island to the army for maneuvers to be held later this summer. Major Harry G. Feldman, Camp Edwards Rent and Claims Officer, announced 'Forbes turns over 6000 acres of land on Naushon Island and two other islands of the Elizabeth Island group south of Cape Cod.

When Major Feldman drove his army jeep through Naushon Island today it was the first time a motor vehicle had been on that Island. The jeep

was floated across Vineyard Sound to Naushon Island in a Jeep Carrier, a distance of approximately 15 miles."

N. B. Needless to say, there are many errors in the above account and no maneuvers ever took place.

However, those of us who were at Monsod well remember the sunny afternoon when from the piazza we watched the strange landing craft approaching across the Sound from the Vineyard. To our amazement she came straight for the little cove just east of the house, put her bow on the beach, let down a ramp, and off drove an army jeep. It drove up the hill to our house and Major Feldman explained that he had authorization to drive over the Island.

Except for Raymond who was in the Military Police and David who was in the Air Force, all the family were there. Bill was especially excited at the coming of the Jeep and was invited to drive in it to the West End, and show the way, which he did, the first member of the family to drive on Naushon in a car.

From Boston paper, no date:

"General Hugh A. Drum, commanding the Eastern Defense Command, 1st Army, last night issued Public Proclamation No. 3 adding Marthas Vineyard to the restricted zone. The new Proclamation would further protect vital, sensitive defense installations, plants and areas along the eastern seaboard.

Zone B 26 Location: . . . All that portion of Nobska Point . . . together with Nonamesset, Naushon, Pasque, Nashawena, Penikese and Cuttyhunk."

1941 The Government approached the Trustees on the matter of procuring two observation posts, one on Mt. Surat and the other on the highest point on the Billiard Table Road overlooking Vineyard Sound.

1942 On Oct. 13th, 1942 Major General K. T. Blood, commanding the Northeast Sector, with 5 officers, a contractor and surveyor came to the Island and went over the ground in detail.

At their meeting on Nov. 1st, 1942 your Trustees passed the following resolution: "Whereas the United States Army desires a lease of certain tracts of land on Naushon Island, with the right to build a wharf on the east side of Tarpaulin Cove and an easement for a cable right of way and landing rights, substantially in accordance with plans filed herewith; said cable to be laid underground from the shore of Buzzards Bay to the Observation Stations, together with the right to build such structures as are necessary for observation posts and residences on said tracts, and the necessary rights of way to approach the same; and WHEREAS, National Defense requires immediate

construction of the same; and WHEREAS, the proper defense of our coast is of vital importance, not only to the Government, but to the Beneficiaries of the Naushon Trust as citizens; NOW, THEREFORE be it VOTED that the Naushon Trust lease to the United States of America those tracts of land located on Naushon Island . . . for use by the United States Army for observation posts, wharf, residences and other structures, landing points for cable, easement over 10 ft. strip for the laying of the same and rights of way for ingress and egress from said tracts; and that W. Cameron Forbes as Chairman of the Board of Trustees be and hereby is authorized and directed to execute . . . said lease at annual rental of \$180. . . . in such form as he may determine."

Arrangements were concluded which, in brief terms, provided for the lease to the Government of 2.19 acres on Mt. Surat, and 2.91 acres on the Billiard Table Road—these two tracts for observation posts and garrison houses; for the right to run a cable from the shore of Buzzards Bay to these two points; for the lease of .12 acres at the east end of Tarpaulin Cove with right to construct at that point a pier, etc. The lease to run for yearly periods, subject to renewal at pleasure of the Government, but not to extend beyond six months following the termination of unlimited national emergency as declared by the President in his Proclamation of May 27th, 1941.

Construction began early in December and was finished late in March.

Naushon now has 2 Army dormitories, planned for 24 men each, 2 artillery range-finding observation posts and a wharf at Tarpaulin Cove. Deep wells have found abundant water for both houses.

1943 On Jan. 27th both the Mt. Surat and Billiard Table stations were manned with an overall detail of 15 men. The Army has connected by wire the Billiard Table Station with the Island telephone line, for emergency use only. Three small pieces of land were also given the Army; for a stable for 2 horses at Mt. Surat and for 2 searchlights near the 2 stations.

The Army installations have affected island life to a minimum degree.

1945 The details (of men) at the Army stations . . . were withdrawn last February and the buildings stripped of their fixtures.

At that time the Fort Rodman (New Bedford) Command, of which they were a part, informed us that they wished to retain the buildings and continue the rent under terms of the lease, on a stand-by basis.

On July 6th the Trustees received formal notice of the cancellation of the lease, to take effect on Sept. 1st, 1945. The lease did not specify the disposition of the buildings built by the Government, on its premises, on its termination.

1945 The Army retains a permanent easement on the cable, which remains. The actual concrete observation posts at both localities, stripped

of their equipment, will also remain. These are not conspicuous, have been covered with earth over which vegetation has been planted and can be made wholly inconspicuous by further planting, if so desired.

As of incidental interest, the chief source of labor of clearing our roads of fallen timber, resulting from the hurricane, were the army details at these posts. The individual soldiers were allowed to hire themselves out for this work during their spare time. In view of the great difficulty in getting civilian labor for this purpose, the arrangement was of great value to us, and the occupation as well as the 85¢ per hour that we paid, seemed very welcome to the men.

Throughout the period of military service on the Island, our relations with the soldiers have been satisfactory and cooperative, and we are glad to be able to record no unpleasantnesses.

1946 While the Army cancelled the lease of the above stations as of Sept. 1, 1945, a new supplemental lease was signed by the Chairman on May 15th, 1946, under which the Trust continues to rent to the Army for 25 years a strip along the cable line, plus tiny areas at the Fire Control Stations.

This amounts to about 1/10th of an acre, that the Army may have authority over the Fire Control Stations and the cable essential thereto.

This lease also provides for the transfer to the Trustees of both Garrison houses and other buildings and improvements made by the Army for the sum of \$175.

1946 In the autumn these two houses which had been bought by the Chairman were moved at his expense to the East End. The Garrison House from the Billiard Table was set up on the ridge west of the Upper Wharf, above the White Cap Road. This is named the White Cap Cottage. The garrison house from Mt. Surat was set up on a ridge in the North Pasture, in a direct line between the Mansion House and the North Pasture House. It has been named the Lichen Cottage and has been allocated to the use of William H. Forbes.

WOODS HOLE PROPERTY

I have never been able to discover the exact arrangement concerning rights in Woods Hole land, but in every deed from 1716 to 1843 the lot of land of about 3 acres is included as part of the Naushon property.

1716 In the Indenture dated 5th February, 1716 between the Hon. Wait Winthrop and John Weekes of Tarpolin Cove Island there is the

description of Catomock and Nonameessett, "with the Lott upon Little Woods Hole neck upon the main Together with . . . the profits, privileges and appurtenances whatsoever to the same premises belonging or in any wise appertaining."

1717 In another document of the following year the same phrases occur.

1730 On the 13th of April, 1730, in the deed of sale of the Naushon Estate from John Winthrop to James Bowdoin (1st), following the description of Nonamesset is this sentence: "and also all of that Lott of Land of him the said John Winthrop, being part of the said Neck of Land called Woods Hole lying over against the said Nonamesset."

1789 In the Will of James Bowdoin, dated March 23d, 1789 he describes the Naushon property and adds, "Also my right and estate in a piece of land held in common with Joseph Parker containing about 3 acres more or less lying within Woods Hole Neck."

1843 In the deed from James Temple Bowdoin (great nephew of James Bowdoin III) is written: "(I devise) 3/10 part of the Islands of Naushon, Nonamesset, Oncatena and the two Buck Islands . . . and 3/10 part of a piece of land now or formerly held in common with Joseph Parker containing about 3 acres more or less lying within Woods Hole Neck . . . being the same premises which were devised by the Will of the Hon. James Bowdoin."

1856 In the deed of sale of Naushon from William W. Swain to John M. Forbes exactly the same words were used to describe this land, "now or formerly held in common with Joseph Parker."

Thus a tract of land in Woods Hole was held as part of the Naushon Estate from very early times, it evidently having been considered necessary that the Island should have legal landing rights and presumably a right of way upon the nearest mainland. When these rights lapsed I do not know.

1872 When the railroad was extended to Woods Hole it replaced New Bedford as the port of embarkation for the Island. On July 22nd, 1872, just a week after the line was finished, "The family, consisting of J. M. F., S. S. F., and the household came down by Old Colony Railroad."

At this time, and for the next 50 years, the Naushon launch had permission from the Railroad and Steamship Companies to tie up at steps on the south side near the end of the Steamship Wharf.

In the 1880s the passenger trains ran to the end of the wharf which was

covered by a long, high shed. Thus we could alight from the train and embark within 20 feet on the *Coryell* without getting wet even in heavy rain. The wharf was rebuilt and the shed removed some time in the 1890s.

1922 The Chairman of the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad (successor to the Old Colony) wrote the Trustees that the location where the *Coryell* lay was silting up and the wharf foundations giving way. The Railroad and Steamship Companies were going to repair the wharf and were considering giving the Trustees a revocable lease of our landing, to give us a clear right to its use.

The Trustees felt it very desirable to obtain land of their own and made enquiries of the owners of nearby properties. There was correspondence with Mr. Charles R. Crane who owned the land south and east of the railroad, but no agreement was reached.

1926 Mr. Newcomb Carleton of the Western Union Telegraph Company agreed to sell half of the land on which the telegraph office was located. This was bought and the adjoining Bradford property, including the house, was also bought.

Permission was given by the Massachusetts Department of Public Works and the U. S. Government to build a wharf. Raymond Emerson, acting for W. Cameron Forbes who was Island Manager, made the plans and the wharf was completed in 1927.

1931 The adjoining Andrews and Cowey properties were bought. It was voted that the Woods Hole land be held in a separate Trust and the Trustees appointed were: W. Cameron Forbes, James S. Russell and Ralph E. Forbes.

1954 In the 1954 Annual Report of the Trustees it was stated: "The lack of parking space in Woods Hole for our growing community continued to present problems. Last autumn an opportunity arose to purchase additional land on Quisset Avenue, located about 8 minutes walk from the wharf. The opportunity was quickly seized by W. Cameron Forbes (a new Trust established separate from the Woods Hole Trust) and the property is now owned by the Quisset Avenue Trust of which the Naushon Trust is sole beneficiary.

When the house on this land has been repaired and a furnace installed it is intended to rent it, but to reserve the land in the rear of the house for the use of Naushon residents and their guests for parking purposes."

It is obvious to all that when one counts the number of cars owned by Naushon winter residents, summer residents, their guests and their employees, not to mention space needed for delivery of supplies at the wharf, it is next to impossible to have adequate parking facilities for the Island.

WOODS HOLE OCEANOGRAPHIC INSTITUTION
INSTALLATIONS ON NONAMESSET

1942 The Woods Hole Oceanographic Institution requested permission to erect a small magazine on Mink Point, the northeast end of Nonamesset for the storage of explosives to be used for experimental purposes during the war. They also obtained permission to build a pier 94 ft. long by 4 ft. wide in the adjacent Sheep Pen Cove, also a wooden shack 12 ft. x 16 ft. about 400 ft. southwest of the magazine. The shack is for laboratory experiments and handling explosives and the pier to facilitate landing and embarking.

1943 The results have been so valuable that the Government, this spring, asked the W. H. O. I. to carry on similar research work with small charges set off, not only under water but in air.

As Nonamesset is the most convenient place for this work the Trustees concluded an agreement as of June 3, 1943, by which the northeast end of Nonamesset, comprising a tract of about 100 acres (bounded by a line running west of the pier near the Nonamesset house, south to the shore of Vineyard Sound) was leased to the Institution for one year at a rental of \$100. per month. Red flags on poles 10 ft. high mark the boundary line and danger zone.

The W. H. O. I. has erected a structure 15 ft. x 21 ft. to house electronics equipment, and a smaller structure in which to handle the explosive charges.

The air experiments are made in a hollow sufficiently deep so that much of the sound will be forced upward. It is expected that about 4 charges a day will be fired.

This area is for the exclusive use of the W. H. O. I. and should be considered out of bounds for all persons, whether residents, visitors or strangers.

1944 During the past year the W. H. O. I. has increased its activities in underwater and other research for the Government and permission was granted to build 4 additional magazines. A small pond near the shore of the Sound was deepened by a bucket dredge to about 15 ft. to use for small charges.

The W. H. O. I. expects the continued use of Nonamesset along present lines. It is setting up a permanent station on Monomoy Point where larger shots can be used than are practicable at Nonamesset, owing to its proximity to Woods Hole. It is fabricating the charges on Nonamesset and shipping them to Monomoy Point by boat.

The danger area marked by flags is still strictly out of bounds for all persons.

1945 The area is being used even more intensively than last year. This summer the open field west of the house has become a storage area for explosives. Red flags and signs indicate the limits of this zone.

1946 The lease was renewed for another year but the Trustees were notified that the activities of the W. H. O. I. on Nonamesset may come to an end this autumn. They have leased the Nonamesset house for occupancy during the summer months by a member of their staff.

1947 The warning signals continue. Lease, with the exception of the house, was renewed for another year.

In the summer of 1947 Walter S. Hughes resumed residence of the house.

Explosives will continue to be stored and some blasts carried on in the pond. Air explosions have been discontinued.

1949 A new agreement was concluded with the W. H. O. I. as of Jan. 1, 1949, whereby it rents about 1/5th of former storage area and has use of the Nonamesset house.

Maintenance will be at charge of the Trustees.

1950-1960 Dr. Arons of the W. H. O. I. and his family have occupied the house for the past ten years, except in 1958 when they were abroad.

The W. H. O. I. continues to rent the storage space for explosives.


1972-1984 In 1972 a bill was introduced into the Congress that would put the Elizabeth Islands, as well as Martha's Vineyard and Nantucket, under the jurisdiction of the Secretary of the Interior. This raised a storm of protest. Various bills and amendments were subsequently introduced over several years. As of 1984, the bills have not been passed.

1984 The W. H. O. I. ceased to store explosives at Nonamesset some years ago.

Chapter VIII

FAUNA, FLORA, BIRDS, 1928 REPORT

FAUNA AND FLORA



The following is a non-scientific and purely amateur list of the animals seen and reported on Naushon:

| | | |
|---------|----------------|-------------------------------|
| Deer | Raccoon | Mice (several varieties) |
| Fox | Rats | Cats (escapes from domestic |
| Muskrat | Moles | cats which have bred in the |
| Mink | Squirrel (Gray | wild state for several gener- |
| Otter | and Red) | ations). |
| Rabbit | | |

The plants of the Islands have been exhaustively studied through the years, first by Lydia R. Swain, later by Sarah Swain Forbes and their findings compiled and doubtless added to, and printed in *The Botany of Naushon*, by Edith Emerson Forbes in 1905, and finally and most completely in the brochure published in 1930 entitled:

FLORA OF THE ELIZABETH ISLANDS

Contributions from the Gray Herbarium of Harvard University
Six reprints from (Publication) *Rhodora*, Vol. 32, July to December, 1930
by John M. Fogg, Jr.

The *Botany of Naushon* lists some 212 plants and gives a quite detailed and non-technical description of some, as shown by the following example:

"Bayberry (*M. cerifa*), Wax Myrtle. . . . It thrives in the neighborhood of the sea. The berries for making candles are gathered in the late autumn, and are thrown into a pot of boiling water. The fat melts out and floats on top of the water and may be skimmed off. When congealed it has a dirty green color. It is melted again and refined. Candles of this do not bend or melt in summer. They burn better and slower (than wax), and yield an agreeable smell when extinguished."

The papers in the John M. Fogg collection give a description of the topography and characteristics of the Islands. They list the habitat of the various plants and flowers on beaches, salt marshes, mud flats, brackish ponds, fresh water ponds, bogs, swamps, grasslands, woodlands, etc.

On the Islands of Naushon, Nonamesset and Uncatena 412 plants have been listed and in most cases only their botanical names given.

In the Mansion House book there is a list of 100 native plants sent to Mrs. John M. Forbes by Miss Emma C. Jones from New Bedford in 1900.

List from *Botany of Naushon*

PLANTS, TREES AND SHRUBS

| | | |
|---|-------------------|-------------------------|
| Acer (Maple) | Black Alder | Everlasting |
| Achillea Yarrow | Blackberry | |
| Adiantum (Maiden's-hair) | Blueberry | Filbert |
| Alder (Amentaceae) | Blue Flag | Fireweed |
| Aletris (Cow Corn) | Blue-eyed grass | Five-finger |
| Ambrosia (elator) | Bog Rush | Fleur-de-lis |
| Amelanchia (June Berry) | Boneset | Flower-de-luce |
| Anagallis (Common Pimpernel) | Boxberry | Foxtail Grass |
| Anemone (Wind Flower) | Bramble | Fragaria |
| Anthemia (Chamomile) | Chokeberry | Fumariaceae |
| Anthoxanthum (Sweet scented Vernal Grass) | Cichorium | Galium |
| Apple of Peru | Cicuta | Gaultheria |
| Aquilegia | Cleavers | Geranium |
| Arbutus (May Flower) | Clethra | Germander |
| Arenaria (Sandwort) | Cohosh | Geum |
| Arethusa (Swamp Pink) | Columbine | Gnaphalium |
| Arrow-Wood | Convolvulus | Goldenrod |
| Arum | Corn Flag | Goldthread |
| Asclepias | Cornus | Gooseberry |
| Aster | Cotton Grass | Grape |
| Azalea | Cranberry | Ground-nut |
| | Cranesbill | |
| | Cudweed | Hamamelis (Witch Hazel) |
| | Cupressus | |
| | Cuscuta | Hardhack |
| | | Hawthorn |
| Balsam | Daisy | Hedera (Ivy) |
| Bartsia | Dangleberry | Hedysarum |
| Bayberry | Datura | Helianthus (Sunflower) |
| Beach Pea | Deadly Nightshade | Hibiscus (Rose Mallow) |
| Bedstraw | Dodder | Hickory |
| Beech | Dogwood | Hippuris (Mares-tail) |
| Beech Drops | Duck's-meat | Hazel-nut |
| Bellis (Daisy) | Dutchman's Pipe | Holly |
| Betony | | Hop-hornbeam |
| Bidens | Epigaea | Horehound |
| Bindweed | Epilobium | Hornbeam |
| Bittersweet | Evening Primrose | Huckleberry |

| | | |
|---------------------|------------------|-------------------------|
| Indian Pipe | Pine-drops | Solomon's-seal |
| Iris | Pisum | Speedwell |
| | Plantain | Sweetbriar |
| Jewel-weed | Pleurisy-root | Sweet-flag |
| Juglans | Plum | |
| June-berry | Poison Hemlock | Tare |
| | Poison Ivy | Thalictrum |
| Ladies-tresses | Poison Sumach | Thapsia |
| Lemna | Poke | Tickseed Sunflower |
| Lobelia | Polygala | Trichostema |
| Lilac | Polygonum | (Blue-curls) |
| Locust-tree | Poplar | Trientalis |
| Loosestrife | Portulaca | Trifolium (Clover) |
| | Potentilla | Trumpet-weed |
| Maiden-hair | Prenanthes | Tupelo |
| Maple | Primrose | Twin-flower |
| Marsh Rosemary | Prinos | |
| Marsh St Johns-wort | Prunella | Ulmus Americana |
| Meadow-beauty | Purslane | (White Elm) |
| Meadow-sweet | Pyrola | |
| Milkweed | Ranunculus | Valerian |
| Mint | Raspberry | Verbena |
| Mollugo | Rhexia | Viburnum |
| Monkey-flower | Rhus | Viola |
| Motherwort | Ribes | Virginia Creeper |
| Mulgedium | Rock-rose | |
| Mullein | Roman Wormwood | Wake Robin (Trillium) |
| | Rose Mallow | Smilax (Cat briar) |
| Nepeta | Rubus | White Daisy |
| Nightshade | Rumex | Willow-herb |
| Nymphaea | | (Epilobium) |
| | Sagittaria | Spotted Wintergreen |
| Oak | St. John's-wort | |
| Oenothera | St. Peter's-wort | Yarrow |
| Ornithogalum | Salicornia | Yellow-eyed Grass |
| Oxalis | Salix | |
| Ox-eye | Sambucus | <i>Plants not above</i> |
| | Sarsaparilla | <i>mentioned</i> |
| Partridge-berry | Sassafras | Broom (Genesta) |
| Peppergrass | Shepherds-purse | Wild Carrot |
| Pickerel-weed | Skullcap | Strawberry (wild) |
| Pigeon-berry | Snapdragon | Eupatorium |

| | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------|--------------------|
| Gerardia | Violet | Cedar, Red |
| Dandelion | Yellow Clover | Cherry, wild |
| Beach Pea | Zosteria, Eel Grass | Cherry, choke |
| Lily | Zyzia, Wild Parsnip | Cherry, cultivated |
| Lenaria (Butter & Eggs) | Japanese Barberry | Hemlock |
| Sweet Fern | Shad Bush | Larch |
| Water Lily | Sumac | Elm (?) |
| Beach Plum | | Pine, Yellow |
| Beach Grass | <i>Trees</i> | Pine, white |
| Sabatia | Birch | Pine, Scotch |
| Meadow Rue | Ash (?) | Pine, Norway |
| Typha Cat-tail Rush | Ailanthus | Walnut, black |
| Trypolium Pussy Clover | Catalpa | Willow |
| Urtica Nettle | Cedar, Swamp White | Chestnut |

 BIRDS SEEN AT NAUSHON

Listed by Ralph E. Forbes

Compiled by Prof. Ludlow Griscom

| | |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| Holbulls Grebe | Mallard |
| Horned Grebe | Black Duck |
| Common Loon | Bald Pated Widgeon |
| Red Throated Loon | Green Winged Teal |
| Parasitis Jaeger | Blue Winged Teal |
| Iceland Gull | Pintail |
| Herring Gull | Greater Scaup |
| Ring Bellied Gull | American Golden Eye |
| Laughing Gull | Buffle Head |
| Buonaparts Gull | Old Squaw |
| Common Tern | American Scoter |
| Arctic Tern | Canada Goose |
| Roseate Tern | American Brant |
| Least Tern | American Bittern |
| Black Tern | Great Blue Heron |
| Leaches Petrel | Little Blue Heron |
| Wilsons Petrel | Green Heron |
| Gannet | Black Crowned Night Heron |
| Double Crested Cormorant | Sora |
| American Merganser | American Coot |
| Red Breasted Merganser | Woodcock |

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|
| Pectoral Sandpiper | Yellow Billed Sapsucker |
| Least Sandpiper | Flicker |
| Semi-palmated Sandpiper | Night Hawk |
| Sanderling | Chimney Swift |
| Greater Yellow Legs | Ruby Throated Humming Bird |
| Lesser Yellow Legs | Eastern Kingbird |
| Solitary Sandpiper | Yellow Bellied Flycatcher |
| Spotted Sandpiper | Crested Flycatcher |
| Western Willett | Phoebe |
| Black Bellied Plover | Wood Pewee |
| Upland Plover | Northern Horned Lark |
| Semi-Pilated Plover | Blue Jay |
| Piping Plover | Crow |
| Hudsonian Curlew | Starling |
| Killdeer | Bobolink |
| Ruddy Turnstone | Robin |
| Bob White | Cowbird |
| Pheasant | Red Winged Blackbird |
| Ruffed Grouse | Rusty Blackbird |
| Mourning Dove | Meadow Lark |
| Marsh Hawk | Orchard Oriole |
| Sharp Shinned Hawk | Baltimore Oriole |
| Coopers Hawk | Purple Grackle |
| Red Tailed Hawk | Bronzed Grackle |
| Red Shouldered Hawk | Purple Finch |
| Broad Winged Hawk | Goldfinch |
| Rough legged Hawk | Red Crossbill |
| Duck Hawk | Redpoll |
| Pigeon Hawk | Pine Siskin |
| Sparrow Hawk | Snow Bunting |
| Goshawk | Vesper Sparrow |
| Osprey | English Sparrow |
| Bald Eagle | Savannah Sparrow |
| Great Horned Owl | Grasshopper Sparrow |
| Barred Owl | Sharp Tailed Sparrow |
| Screech Owl | White Crowned Sparrow |
| Yellow Billed Cuckoo | White Throated Sparrow |
| Black Billed Cuckoo | Tree Sparrow |
| Belted Kingfisher | Chipping Sparrow |
| Hairy Woodpecker | Field Sparrow |
| Downy Woodpecker | Slate Colored Sparrow |
| Red Headed Woodpecker | Song Sparrow |

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Fox Sparrow | Yellow Warbler |
| Towhee | Prairie Warbler |
| Rose Breasted Grosbeak | Connecticut Warbler |
| Scarlet Tanager | Wilson Warbler |
| Summer Tanager | Oven Bird |
| Cliff Swallow | Northern Water Thrush |
| Barn Swallow | Redstart |
| Tree Swallow | American Pipit |
| Bank Swallow | Mocking Bird |
| Cedar Waxwing | Catbird |
| Northern Shrike | Northern Yellow Throat |
| Migrant Shrike | Brown Thrasher |
| Red Eyed Vireo | Carolina Wren |
| White Eyed Vireo | House Wren |
| Philadelphia Vireo | Winter Wren |
| Nashville Warbler | Brown Creeper |
| Black & White Warbler | White Breasted Nuthatch |
| Blue Winged Warbler | Red Breasted Nuthatch |
| Parula Warbler | Black Capped Chickadee |
| Cape May Warbler | Gold Crested Kinglet |
| Yellow Warbler | Ruby Crowned Kinglet |
| Black Throated Blue Warbler | Blue-gray Knatcatcher |
| Myrtle Warbler | Veery |
| Chestnut Sided Warbler | Gray Cheeked Thrush |
| Bay Breasted Warbler | Hermit Thrush |
| Black Throated Green Warbler | Blue Bird |
| Pine Warbler | Turkey |
| Blackpoll Warbler | Whippoorwill |
| Western Palm Warbler | Snowy Owl (added by W. C. F.) |

RARE SHELL REPORTED ON NAUSHON ISLAND, SEPTEMBER 14, 1918

From Museum of Comparative Zoology, Cambridge, Massachusetts

"In regard to *Hygromia Rufescens* reported from the French Watering Place on Naushon Island by Thompson 60 years ago. This record of Thompson's, the only one for the U. S., has been reprinted in scientific journals from that day to this. Of late years doubt has been cast on the authenticity of Thompson's record simply because no specimens are in existence for that place or in any museums or collections that I know of. This particular shell is very easily recognized and I cannot conceive of Thompson having made an



error of his identification. I firmly believe that there is a good chance that the shell is on Naushon in the vicinity of the place you showed me on the blue prints.

Its favorite spot is under logs and boards, and the one who finds the shell will have been instrumental in putting Naushon back in the list of important conchological localities.

(Signed) William F. Clapp

Note by W. C. F.: Mr Clapp came across a reference to a French Watering Place Spring and a certain shell found there. He wants to know "if you will look around under a board or on a rock for a little brown shell, a sort of horse color, size of the end of your little finger."

W. F. Clapp writes: "I, of course, have never collected *Rufescens* and can only guess at its probable habitat judging from its closest relative, *H. Hispida*, it is almost certain to be found in more or less open, grassy meadows, partly concealed by old boards or logs or stones. If there is any exposure of limestone or even an old shell heap in the vicinity it might be well to look carefully there, for limestone is *Hygromia*'s special delight.

If you should happen across any other species, either in the habitat of *Hygromia* or in the fresh water, I would be glad to have you save them for me, for it is perfectly possible that you might obtain some other record as remarkable as that of *Hygromia*.

The really big problem connected with the existence of these exotic species on our New England shores is that they tend to prove the existence of a former land connection with Europe in pre-glacial days.

We have numerous European land shells on the New England coast in isolated spots, formerly thought to have been introduced by commerce but as we increase the number of species found we strengthen the theory of a former land connection and weaken the theory of commercial distribution. The whole problem is extremely interesting."

Original reference to *Hygromia Rufescens* at Naushon is in *Journal of Conchology*, 1885, Vol. IV. pp. 369-373, Thompson; and Occasional Papers of Boston Society of Natural History, Vol. VII, No. 13.

EXTRACTS FROM REPORT BY W. CAMERON FORBES

READ AT A DINNER ON DECEMBER 27TH, 1928

To the Beneficiaries of the Naushon Trust

Ladies and Gentlemen:

Our Grandfather, John Murray Forbes, left the Island of Naushon to

5 Trustees, the first Trustees named in the Will being his 5 children. As his older son, William H. Forbes had died before he did, I was elected to be Trustee in his place, and upon Uncle Malcolm's death Rose was elected to take his place, so that until the year 1916 the Trust was managed by me as Managing Trustee, with the four sisters as co-Trustees.

Upon the death of the 3 sisters, which occurred during the 12 months ending January 23d, 1917, Jim Russell, Ralph, and Ellen Forbes were elected to take their places and Dorothea Hughes was chosen Secretary of the Board. (Edith W. Gregg succeeded Dorothea and has carried this responsibility for some 35 years, and still [1960] does.)

The Trustees own the property, in the words of Grandfather Forbes as expressed in his Will, "for the common benefit of my children and their descendants, during the lifetime of my children and such grandchildren of mine as shall be living at my death. The Trustees are given the right to lease the whole or any part . . . to any child or children of mine or any descendant or descendants of the children of mine during the lifetime of this Trust, but with this express condition that it shall be leased only for the use and occupancy of such child, children or descendants and their immediate family as and for places of residence or farms". But there is a clause that allows them, with the consent of a majority of the Trustees, to sublet parts for periods not exceeding one year at a time.

There is an express condition against cutting wood without the express approval of the Trustees and the Trustees are given control of all shooting and fishing privileges.

The property belonging to the Trustees consists of all the Island except that part taken by the United States Government for the Lighthouse, and two tracts of land which are owned by the heirs of my father, William H. Forbes and Uncle Malcolm, respectively. (These two tracts of land were deeded back to the Trustees in 1939).

The Pony Pasture House, which was built for the occupancy of Aunt Mary Russell, with Grandfather's funds, belongs to the Trustees, as does the Mansion House.

Houses have been built (by or) for James S. Russell, Ralph E. Forbes, Raymond and Amelia Emerson, and Henry S. Forbes, as well as four houses known as the Central, Field, Shore and Ridge houses, built in the pasture (west of first bridge) for a group of grandchildren who pooled their interests and took shares in this venture. The present holders of these shares are: Edward W. Forbes, Henry S. Forbes, Alexander Forbes, Alice F. Howland, Dorothea M. Hughes and the heirs of Edith F. Webster.

The Pony Pasture House, which was specially built for Aunt Mary Russell has been regarded as reserved for her descendants, and as a matter

of sentiment no use has been made of it by any other persons except with the approval of her heirs.

There has been quite a strong feeling in the family that certain portions of the Island should be kept free from structures of all sorts. In 1926 there was a vote unanimously passed to the effect that "for the present, spirit of the Island can best be preserved by concentrating the buildings at the East End, east of the Green Gate Wall and it would be the present policy to grant sites for additional buildings preferably in that region."

The Trustees have regular stated quarterly meetings at which affairs of interest to the Island are brought up for consideration. It is fortunate that the Trustees have all come to these meetings in the spirit of cooperation.

They are usually harmonious and an effort is made to have decisions unanimous, and most of them have been so.

It is appropriate to give a brief account of a few of the activities which the Trustees have occupied themselves with in the past decade.

Management. I have acted as Managing Trustee but much of the work has been done by Raymond Emerson who has been energetic, painstaking and competent.

The accounts have been kept in the office of J. M. Forbes & Co., and our office has had to advance moneys to meet a fairly consistent overdraft.

The foreman for some years was a man named Chambers. His place was taken by a man of much higher grade, Tawell, a friend of Weston Howland. He was succeeded by Hendrickson. He resigned and within a few months William Allen has been secured, who seems to be quiet, intelligent and pleasing.

Telephone. The increasing use of the telephone has been a great problem and for one or two years a telephone operator was employed, which proved annoying and an expense. It was difficult for the family to realize that she could not be on duty from 6 A. M. to 11 P. M. The solution to this difficulty was found in connecting all the Naushon telephones to the Woods Hole exchange. This system worked infinitely better.

A separate company known as the Elizabeth Islands Telephone Company, all the stock of which is owned by the Trustees, has entered into an agreement with the New England Telephone and Telegraph Co. by which there is an exchange of service without full charge being made for all our instruments by the Telephone Company.

We had no adequate agreement for landing our cable on the mainland and running our wires over the property of the Penzance Trustees. Last year they put the wires underground and at that time an agreement was entered into with the person on whose shore our cable landed which gives us a permanent right for landing our cable during the duration of the Trust or the lifetime of anyone here.

Landing at Woods Hole. According to the old deeds Grandfather Forbes owned a right to land and a right of way over Butlers Point, which is now the private estate of Charles R. Crane. This right has undoubtedly lapsed by reason of disuse and it was a rather interesting fact that with all his vision Grandfather Forbes made no provision for an adequate landing place on the mainland to be available exclusively for Naushon Island. It was ultimately necessary for the Trustees to secure a tract of land on which they succeeded in getting the State to give them the right to build a wharf. We now own a frontage on the street, a narrow strip of land, and a 25 ft. frontage on the water. The wharf has been built and has proved eminently satisfactory. The railroad wharf and the coal wharf on either side of the property converge in such a way that it is improbable that any other wharf can be built in the vicinity and we believe that we have secured the most desirable site in Woods Hole.

Relation to Gosnold. Naushon Island in the earliest days pertained to New York and was later set off to Massachusetts and made a part of the Town of Falmouth (this is an error, it was part of the Township of Chilmark. [A.F.E.])

Still later it was set off as a part of the Town of Gosnold. This arrangement has manifest advantages as Gosnold has small expenses and a very low tax rate. We as yet have no need of a school and the only service the Town performs for us is to give a place where our citizens can vote, and they have given the rank of constable or special officer to certain of the employees on Naushon. Charlie Olsen is a constable. We have had police powers given to the Manager of the Island from time to time and to King at the Cove and John Olsen at the West End. This gives them a little better standing in dealing with trespassers and in enforcing the rules of the Island. The pay for the constable is \$25. per year, almost nominal.

The Trustees have studiously avoided mixing in any way with Gosnold politics. We have not tried to influence the vote of our employees and have contented ourselves with making it convenient, by the use of our transportation facilities, for all voters on the Island to attend the elections. There are factions at Gosnold, and there has been a tendency to run up both the appraisal and tax rates from year to year, the money being spent wholly on Cuttyhunk Island. It is best to let sleeping dogs lie!

Dredging Fund. On the 5th of April, 1917, a little more than two months before his death, Waldo Forbes made a gift to the Trustees, but requested that it be used for carrying out a desired program of dredging in the Inner and Outer Harbor. After the dredging plan had been completed, any balance could be used for the maintenance of existing transportation, including the wharves etc. specifically mentioning the Bobolink Wharf.

The Trustees have made use of this fund on several occasions. They

have used a part to assist in the purchase of the *Iduna* and to replace the *Coryell* and the *Roamer*.

Sheep. The sheep situation is unsatisfactory. There is an unaccountable loss of sheep each year. It has been difficult to increase the flock enough to properly graze off the pasture and help keep the broom down and the woods clear.

A disastrous experiment was tried some years ago of employing a trained shepherd. Among other things he recommended the purchase of some western ewes, which was done and they were turned loose. They not only died in great numbers but infected the flock so there was a great loss in ewes, a loss from which the flock has never recovered.

The present flock seems healthy and the sheep are doing well. There ought to be twice as many on the Island.

Deer. The deer seem plentiful and in spite of a hunt each year seem to be increasing in numbers.

Roads. The Trustees appointed a committee of two to consider the question of determining the names of existing roads and naming roads which had no name or about the name of which there was a difference of opinion. Feeling that a clear understanding was imperative the committee made definite recommendations which were acted upon by the Trustees and the decisions of the Trustees placed on a carefully drawn map, 10 copies of which were placed in the different houses.

It is believed that the present number and location of roads is adequate to the needs of the Island. The roads are kept in fair shape, probably in as good shape as they have ever been.

Memory Road. Our cousin, Emma B. Hathaway, before her death said that the biggest thing in her life had been her relationship to her uncle, John M. Forbes and her aunt Sarah; that she wanted some memorial to them built on the Island with her money, and after her death a fund of \$7000. was paid over by her executors to Ralph E. Forbes and me. After careful consideration it was decided to build the Memory Road, to carry out the purpose for which Grandfather Forbes had made many of his plantings — namely, to provide a sheltered route across the Desert from the East to the West End by which one could drive and avoid the northwest winds.

This road is laid largely in the valleys, and for most of its length is protected by evergreens planted by Grandfather Forbes. It has been carefully graded and levelled and is now complete.

The balance of the fund has been used to build a fence around the open sandy places south of the Bowdoin Road. The broom has been cut away south of the Main Road, all through the Desert west of the new fence, north of the North Shore Road and east of the Yellow Gate Wall. Bridle paths

have been cut through the broom, north of the Bowdoin Road and Plantagenet Wall.

Game Refuge. At one time a group of members of the family endeavored to develop Naushon as a game refuge, and at the same time improve the shooting facilities. A gamekeeper was employed, the sheep pond fenced and used for Canada geese and various kinds of ducks. Duck feed was set out, different kinds in different ponds and swamps, and a fairly extensive program of breeding mallards and setting them out, was adopted. A number of ponds were declared sanctuaries, and shooting prohibited. Eventually the family seemed to lose interest and the enterprise was abandoned.

Insurance. The Trustees have had all the property revalued, and what was believed to be adequate insurance placed.

Ways. W. Cameron Forbes, with the assistance of other members of the family and a portion of the dredging fund has constructed a new Ways near the Upper Wharf, capable of taking boats as large as the *Kalinga* and *Onawa*.

Electric Light Plant. The family decided to construct a central electric light plant at the farm, and this has been built. Wires are led from it to residences, farm and service buildings and barns.

In the Mansion House I have preferred to use candles and lamps for the parlors and bedrooms and to use electricity for the service portions of the house, cellars, corridors and bathrooms. The plant has worked well and been a great convenience.

Captain Olsen. Captain Olsen has been with the family for over 40 years. He is getting on in years and his wife is also infirm. A small addition has been made to their house which will add greatly to their comfort.

Ticks. The matter of ticks has been the subject of an interesting experiment. A French expert, Dr. Larrouse, brought some French flies which feed on ticks, and tried turning them loose on Naushon. This has met with a limited, but not complete, success. They have lasted through two winters and it is hoped that they will prosper and reduce the annoyance to animals and to persons from ticks on the Island.

Possible change in the Trust. The question of a change in the Trust to make it possible for any of the descendants wishing to dispose of their interest, to do so, has become of immediate concern. The matter has been referred to lawyers and we have got Nelson Perkins to give his personal attention to the matter, and hope that the Trustees will be ready before long to submit to the beneficiaries a procedure for their consideration.

Play House. A question has been brought before the Trustees as to providing a play house where the young people could gather without using one of

the houses occupied by the family. (This suggestion has arisen several times during the years but no action has been taken).

Financial Situation. The financial situation of the Island has not been satisfactory. The Receipts of the Island are divided into five classes:

1. A fund made up to pay taxes and insurance, which is charged in direct proportion to the ownership of the Island. This means that each of the Hughes pays $\frac{1}{8}$, the Russell grandchildren $\frac{1}{20}$, the W. H. Forbes grandchildren $\frac{1}{24}$ and the J. Malcolm Forbes grandchildren $\frac{1}{28}$, being their proportionate ownership in the Island, respectively.
2. There is a fixed charge of \$300. for each of the second generation, paid by Edith E. Forbes and Rose D. Forbes, and \$150. for each grandchild of whom there are 20 alive or represented by living issue, and no charge, as yet for great-grandchildren.
3. There is use rent, charged only to children and grandchildren, of \$200. a month for all the time they are on the Island.
4. The next charge is for rental for the use of Island facilities, occupation of houses, use of stables, wharves etc., a service charge for work done by the farm, teaming, handling of ice, coal and wood, hay and grain for the horses etc., all these calculated to yield the farm a slight profit.

There is also a recently imposed charge to partly meet the cost of running the launch and maintaining transportation to and from the Island.

5. And finally, all these receipts have not been sufficient to meet the total cost of running the Island, which has been running behind for the last 8 years.

The deficit has been met, largely, by voluntary contributions by the members of the family who use the Island.

The cold, hard facts of the case are that the cost of labor and materials has greatly increased, while our schedule of rates has not been increased to meet it. The scale of charges should be sharply raised, and even then the family will get a great deal more for their money than they could get by going to other places favored as seashore resorts.

The family fortunes and revenues have prospered so that an increase in the rate of charges ought not to be as great a burden as the lesser charges were when they were imposed. And what more desirable use could be made of the property that Grandfather Forbes gave in such abounding measure to the family than in maintaining the Island he loved so well, in the spirit in which he gave it.

The policy of the Trustees has been, and I am sure it will be, to encourage the use of the Island for the purposes for which Grandfather Forbes left it,

to the fullest degree possible — to make it as easy as possible for his descendants to make use of the Island and have the facilities available for as many of his descendants as can reasonably be done.

Affectionately W. Cameron Forbes

It is 30 years since Cameron Forbes read this report to the family, an occasion which all who were present will remember, and a very great many changes have taken place. Not one of the Trustees of 1928 is now living and a new generation is steering the course of Island affairs.

Some 10 new family residences have been built and the whole scale of needs and demands has increased accordingly. Perhaps the greatest change is in the numbers of persons who come and go, and in the number of non-family friends who may now take houses, and who have come in increasing numbers and have added much to Naushon life.

As the life of the average summer resort has become more complex and the pressures upon young and old have become greater, the freedom and relaxation of the Island life has become more and more valued.

With the building up of many reserves the Island finances are in a far more favorable condition than they were 30 years ago. Every effort is made to keep Naushon in a healthy, solid position as regards finances, physical plant and above all, its harmonious family relationships.

This report of "the Governor" which gives in a few pages a resumé of the Naushon data which fill this volume, seems a fitting ending to the accumulation of facts here gathered.

As will be realized, this is a book of reference, not in any sense a history. More emphasis has been put on the earlier times than on the later, because their records are less available and more likely to vanish with the passing of time.

Some day there will be written an account which will preserve the romance and the meaning of bygone days and persons on the Island, a true Naushon History.



SOURCES



Deeds, Records and Letters stored in office of J. M. Forbes & Company
Mansion House Books
Stone House Books
Uncatena Books
Minutes of the Trustees of Naushon (1899-1933)
Annual Reports of Trustees of the Naushon Trust (1928-1960)
Farm Record, Vol. 1 (1833-1885)
Farm Accounts (1885-1894)
Early History of Naushon Island by Amelia F. Emerson
Botany of Naushon by Lydia R. Swain, Sarah S. Forbes and edited by Edith
E. Forbes
Flora of the Elizabeth Islands by John M. Fogg, Jr.
Rare Shell, Boston Society of Natural History (Vol. VII, No. 13)

PAPERS DEPOSITED IN THE OFFICE OF J. M. FORBES & COMPANY

- 1682 Deed, Matthew Mayhew to Wait Winthrop (parchment)
- 1685 Indenture between Matthew Mayhew and Col. Thomas Dongan
- 1694 Agreement between Wait Winthrop and John Weekes
- 1707 Agreement between Wait Winthrop and Joseph Fuller
- 1708 Agreement between Wait Winthrop and John Weekes
- 1716 Agreement between Wait Winthrop and John Weekes (Lease)
- 1717 Deed, John Winthrop to Thomas Lechmere
- 1723 Letter, Joseph Fuller to John Winthrop about the Indians
- 1723 Agreement with the Indians
- 1725 Writ of Ejectment, James Bowdoin vs. Fuller, Robinson & Weekes
- 1730 Deed of Naushon from John Winthrop to J. Wilkinson and James Bowdoin
- 1731 Deed, John Winthrop to John Wilkinson (Parchment Deed)
- 1744 Deed, Thomas Lechmere to James Bowdoin
- 1843 Deeds and papers concerning the purchase of Naushon by William W. Swain and John M. Forbes from James Temple Bowdoin and the Trustees of Bowdoin College, 10 in number.

- 1867 Deed of Weepectets from Ward M. Parker to John M. Forbes
Also other miscellaneous letters and papers relating to Naushon.
-

MEMORANDUM OF DEEDS IN RELATION TO NAUSHON ESTATE
RECORDED IN DUKES COUNTY LAND RECORDS

Vol. 1

- p. 329 *Seayk*, Indian Sachem to Thomas Mayhew, April 20, 1654.
- p. 329 *Quaquaquinigat*, Indian Sachem to Thomas Mayhew, Aug. 13, 1657. (consideration two coats).
- p. 55 Thomas Mayhew to Thomas Tupper, May 15, 1666 (Nunnamessett).
- p. 45 Thomas Mayhew to John Haynes, Jan. 12, 1681 ($\frac{3}{4}$ of said Estate).
- p. 327 Thomas Mayhew's Will, June 16, 1681, $\frac{1}{2}$ of $\frac{3}{4}$ to Matthew Mayhew, his Grandson, $\frac{1}{2}$ of $\frac{3}{4}$ to his daughter, Hannah Daggett.
- p. 329 Thomas Mayhew to Matthew, his Grandson, Jan. 23, 1681. (Power of Attorney).
- p. 301 Hannah Daggett to Thomas Tupper, April 7, 1682.
- p. 358 Thomas Mayhew to John Haynes, May 20, 1681 (Monohansset).
- p. 333 John Haynes to M. Mayhew, May 24, 1682. $\frac{3}{4}$ of Elizabeth I. (mortgage).
- p. 274 *Matthew Mayhew* to Wait Winthrop, Oct. 17, 1682 (Deed of Catamucke).
- p. 275 Hannah Daggett to Wait Winthrop, Oct. 17, 1682 (her right).
- p. 335 John Haynes to Matthew Mayhew, Nov. 6, 1682 (his $\frac{3}{4}$ right).
- p. 147 & p. 16 Richard Sarson to Wait Winthrop, May 2, 1688 (Monohansett).
- p. 380 Thos. Tupper & sons to Wait Winthrop, Dec. 1, 1692 (Nunnamessett and 1 other Island).

Vol. 3

- p. 354 *John Winthrop*, Thos. Lechmere and Ann Lechmere to James Bowdoin, Jan. 11, 1717 (Mortgage).

Vol. 5

- p. 130 John Winthrop to John Wilkinson, April 13, 1730.

- p. 132 John Winthrop to John Wilkinson and James Bowdoin, April 14, 1730.
- Vol. 6
- p. 394 Thomas Lechmere & his wife to Wm. Brown, Mar. 1, 1733 (Mortgage discharged $1/3$).
- Vol. 7
- p. 185 James Bowdoin to Thos. Lechmere & wife, May 9, 1733 $1/3$.
- Vol. 5
- p. 389 Thos Lechmere & wife to James Boudouine, Father of Jas. & William Bowdoin, April 18, 1734 (Mortgage) $1/3$.
- Vol. 8
- p. 626 James Pitts vs. Jas. & Wm. Bowdoin, Mar. 8, 1753 (Execution, put into the hands of Thos. Robinson (Nonamessett & $1/6$ of Elizabeth Island)).
- Vol. 9
- p. 186 Wm. Bowdoin, Jas. Bowdoin and James Pitts, Apr. 16, 1754 (Catamuck).
- Vol. 8
- p. 627 Medad Tupper to Wm. Bowdoin, June 20, 1759 (quitclaim his right & title).
- Vol. 9
- p. 192 Lechmere Family & Jonathan Simpson & wife to J. Bowdoin, Dec. 30, 1761.
- p. 188 William Bowdoin to John Erving, Mar. 25, 1762. (Mortgage) $1/3$.
- p. 669 William Bowdoin to Richard Law & Wm. Coit, Oct. 25, 1769. (Mortgage transferred to John Erving). $1/2$.
- Vol. 10 William Bowdoin to John Erving, Nov. 3, 1772. (Mortgage). $1/2$
- Vol. 26
- p. 38 James Temple Bowdoin and James Temple Bowdoin, Jr. to William Shimmin, July 6, 1836.
- Vol. 29
- p. 136 James Temple Bowdoin to President & Trustees of Bowdoin College in Maine, Oct. 30, 1843. (Quitclaim) $3/10$.

- p. 137 President & Trustees of Bowdoin College to J. T. Bowdoin, Oct. 30, 1843.

Vol. 29

- p. 140 *James Temple Bowdoin* and President and Trustees of Bowdoin College to William W. Swain and John M. Forbes, Oct. 30, 1843.
- p. 172 William W. Swain and John M. Forbes to Josiah Quincy and Jonathan Phillips, Trustees. Dec. 4, 1843 (Mortgage).

Vol. 38

- p. 295 William W. Swain to John M. Forbes, Nov. 27, 1856. (Quitclaim). $\frac{1}{2}$ of said Estate.
- p. 472 John M. Forbes to the President and Fellows of Harvard College, March 12, 1859.

DUKES COUNTY, EDGARTOWN, MARCH 19, 1859

I hereby certify that the foregoing Memorandum contains all the Deeds and other Instruments in relation to the Naushon Island Estate, now on record in the Registry of Deeds for Dukes County.

Attest.

Josiah H. Smith

INDEX OF NAMES AND PLACES

A

| | |
|---|---------------------------|
| Abraham's Bosom | 12, 98 |
| Adams, Calvin | 28 |
| Adams, Moses | 27, 28, 54 |
| <i>Admiral</i> | 186 |
| <i>Adventuress</i> | 190 |
| Agassiz, Professor Louis | 164 |
| <i>Albacore</i> | 64, 185 |
| Allen, Henry J. | 3 |
| Allan, William W. | 27, 216 |
| American Bell Telephone Co. | 165 |
| America's Cup | 167, 188, 190 |
| Amory, Copley | 176 |
| Amory, Copley, Jr. | 7, 43, 108, 147, 169 |
| Amory, Ethel C. (Forbes) (Mrs. Copley, Jr.) | 7, 43 |
| Amory, John C. | 6 |
| Amory, J. Forbes | 6 |
| Amory, Mary Forbes (Mrs. Copley) | 166, 176 |
| Amory, Walter | 6, 43 |
| Amory, Walter, Jr. | 6 |
| Anderson, Hendrick | 191 |
| Andrew, Governor John A. | 100, 102, 164 |
| Andrews Property | 206, 207 |
| Anthony, Captain Caleb | 194 |
| Antiko, James | 14, 22 |
| Antiko, Job | 14, 22 |
| Antiko, Thomas | 22 |
| Arons, Professor Arnold | 43, 205 |
| Asa | 22 |
| Atkinson, Edward W. | 159 |
| Atkinson, Ellen Russell (Mrs. Edward W.) | 166 |
| Atkinson, Henry R. | 6 |
| Atlantic Works | 185 |
| Austin, Beriah | 28, 52, 54, 116 |
| Austin, Captain | 135 |
| <i>Azalea</i> | 64, 67, 68, 184, 185, 187 |
| Azalea Point | 68 |

B

| | |
|-------------------------|-------------------|
| Baker, Mr. | 159 |
| Baker, E. L. | 84 |
| Balch, John | 179 |
| Banks, Charles E. | 25 |
| Barges | 186 |
| Barracks | 116 |
| Barracks, Revolutionary | 29, 46, 114, 200 |
| Barracks, U. S. Army | 30, 169, 202, 203 |
| Bates, W. Ansel | 26 |
| Bath Houses | 65, 66 |
| Bayberry Wax | 20-23 |
| Beach Grass | 96, 103 |
| Beavertail Light | 51 |
| Beckton Ranch | 197 |

| | |
|----------------------------------|--|
| Beetle, David | 27, 47 |
| Bell, Alexander Graham | 165 |
| Bernsten, Captain | 191 |
| Besse, Benjamin | 27, 43 |
| Besse, Lemuel | 28, 45 |
| Besse, Willard | 3, 28, 122, 156, 184, 187, 191, 196 |
| Billiard House (Pony Pasture) | 171 |
| Billiard Table Road | 30, 66, 122, 169, 201-203 |
| Biographical Sketches | 163-168 |
| Bird List | 211-213 |
| Bird & Son | 119 |
| <i>Black Duck</i> | 190 |
| Black Woods | 102 |
| Blaney, Anthony | 23, 27, 46, 133 |
| Blaney's Pond | 24, 46 |
| Bliss, Moses | 15 |
| Blood, Major General K. T. | 201 |
| Blue Hills Observatory | 71 |
| Boats, list of | 184, 185 |
| Bobolink Cottage | 169 |
| Bobolink Hill | 164 |
| Bobolink Wharf | 61, 64-67, 169, 217 |
| Borden, Captain | 64 |
| Boston Light | 51 |
| Boston Seamen's Friend Society | 48 |
| Bosworth, Captain David | 16, 191 |
| <i>Botany of Naushon</i> | 164, 208, 211 |
| Bowdoin College, Trustees of | 5, 8 |
| Bowdoin, Elizabeth (Lady Temple) | 4 |
| Bowdoin Family | 1-3, 5 |
| Bowdoin, James (I) | 5 |
| Bowdoin, James (II) | 5, 9, 29, 134 |
| Bowdoin, James (III) | 5, 8, 30, 38-42, 44, 45, 51, 52, 58, 93, 94, 114, 134-136, 168, 170, 192, 193, 205, mentioned throughout |
| Bowdoin, James Temple | 5, 31, 37, 114, 163 |
| Bowdoin, James Temple, Jr. | 5, 8, 163 |
| Bowdoin, James Winthrop | 136 |
| Bowdoin, Sarah (Mrs. James III) | 5, 39, 94, 170 |
| Bowdoin, William | 5, 9, 29, 134 |
| Bowling Alley | 29, 48 |
| <i>Boxer</i> | 42, 83 |
| Bradley, William | 41, 42 |
| Brant Light | 51 |
| Breakwater | 64 |
| Brereton, John | 150 |
| Bridges | 2, 63-67, 70, 71, 120, 128 |
| Briggs, Abraham | 27 |
| Brigham, Mr. | 161 |
| Brightman, William H. | 28, 54, 87 |
| Broom | 91, 92, 96, 99-105, 106 |
| Broom, control of | 91, 92, 107 |
| Brownell, Ellery | 28, 45 |

| | | | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Browntail Moths | 72 | Cony, Captain | 40 |
| Brumpt, Professor | 74 | Cony, Hon. Daniel | 39, 170 |
| Buck Islands | 2, 42, 100 | Cook, Henry | 87, 192 |
| Bullard, Baalis | 26, 30, 40, 41 | Coolidge, President Calvin | 12, 111 |
| Bull's Neck | 15-17, 64, 67 | Coolidge, Frederick | 157 |
| Burdick, Charles | 16, 29, 31, 47, 48, 59 | Coolidge Grove | 12, 13 |
| Burgess, Edward | 188, 189, 190 | <i>Coryell</i> | 48, 64, 69, 185, 218 |
| Burgess, Starling | 190 | Coryell, Myers | 185 |
| Burying Grounds | 17-19 | "Cottage" | 163, 165, 166 |
| Butler, William | 28, 52 | Cottage Lot | 26, 53, 100, mentioned frequently |
| Buzzard's Bay | 2, 8, 9, mentioned frequently | Cowey Property | 206, 207 |
| C | | | |
| Cable | 178-180, 183, 202, 203, 216 | Cranberry Culture | 54, 86, 87 |
| Cabot, Edward | 172 | Crane, Charles R. | 206, 217 |
| Cabot, E. C. | 106 | Crapo, Henry H. | 2, 14, 52, 120 |
| Cabot, Dr. Samuel | 157 | Crapo, Joseph | 27, 42, 139 |
| Cahoon, Samuel | 70 | Creamer, Lawrence | 27, 49 |
| Calf Pasture | 14, 169, 176 | Crocker, Captain Aubrey | 188, 191 |
| Calf Pasture Billiard House | 169 | Cromwell, Captain | 63 |
| Calot, Louis | 26 | Crowinshield, B. | 190 |
| Cameron, James | 26, 31, 57, 99, 104, 157, 158 | Cummings, Charles K. | 43 |
| Cammett, Captain Warren | 15, 191 | Cunningham, Foster | 192 |
| Canoe | 20, 184 | Curtis, N. B. | 117 |
| Cape Cod Telegraph Co. | 178 | Cuttyhunk | 150, 217 |
| Captain's Cottage | 15, 16, 61, 73 | D | |
| Carleton, Newcomb | 70, 206 | Dabney, Honorable Charles W. | 172 |
| Carriages, list of | 199 | Dabney Family | 189 |
| Carson, Frank S. | 28 | Dabney, Rose (Mrs. J. Malcolm Forbes) | see Forbes |
| Cary, Alice Forbes (Mrs. Edward M.) | 5, 16, 64, 164, 168, 172 | Dahlmer, Captain Lawrence B. | 192 |
| Cary, Edward M. | 122, 164 | Dana, Edith | 17 |
| Cataymucke | 4, 5, 9 | Dana, Edward A. | 16 |
| Cedar Island | 71, 72, mentioned frequently | Dana, Grace | 17 |
| Central House | 169, 177 | Davis, Abner | 9 |
| Chadwick, Barnabas | 26, 30, 41, 136 | Davis, Clinton | 28, 54 |
| Chambers, William | 27, 216 | Davis, Frank | 28 |
| Chamucke | 22 | Davis, Captain Jabez | 34 |
| Charleton, Mass. | 31, 32, 114-117 | Davis, Thomas | 8 |
| Cherry, Mr. | 107 | Deeds | 8, 9, 22, 38, 222-225 |
| Childs Grave | 19 | Deer | 97, 150, 153, 218 |
| Chilmark, Mass | 2, 8, 51, 217 | Deer Hunts | 153-155 |
| Church, Benjamin B. | 3 | Delano, Warren, Jr. | 16, 140 |
| Church, Charles C. | 3 | Desert, the | 94-96, 107, 218, mentioned frequently |
| Civil War | 165, 166, 200 | Dexter, Wirt | 157 |
| Clapp, William F. | 214 | Ditching | 73, 81, 82, 84 |
| Clark, Elton | 159 | "Dolly" | 12, 197 |
| Cleveland, Dr. | 142 | Donald, John | 27, 49 |
| Cleveland, President S. Grover | 111 | Donovan and Flanagan | 173 |
| Clifford, Nathan, Jr. | 27 | Drayton, John | 158 |
| Cobb, Dr. Stanley | 146 | Dredging Fund | 68-71, 217 |
| Collins, Captain | 191 | Dredging and Harbor Improvements | 67-71 |
| Colt, Ellen (Mrs. Thomas Singer) | 6 | Driver, William | 180 |
| Colt, Henry F. Jr. | 6 | Drum, General Hugh A. | 113, 201 |
| Colt, Mary F. | 6 | Duck Pond | 66 |
| Community Establishment | 176, 177 | <i>Dude Train</i> | 185 |
| Community Houses | 169, 177 | Dukes County | 3, 8, 51, 152, 226 |
| Community Stable | 177, 198 | Dunham, H. G. O. | 86 |
| Comucke | 22 | Dunlap, B. B. | 63, 67 |

E

- Eagle Hollow 12, 13, 95, mentioned frequently
 Eddy, Mr. 161
 Eddy F. W. 158
 Eel Grass 78-80
 Electric Light Plant 60, 219
 Elfin Glen 14
 Elizabeth Islands
 2-4, 9, 23, 39, 46, 92, 133, 134, 150, 200
 Elizabeth Island Telephone Co. 181, 182, 216
 Emerson, Amelia Forbes (Mrs. Raymond)
 7, 43, 65, 169, 177
 Emerson, David 201
 Emerson, Edith (Mrs. William H. Forbes)
 see Forbes 165, 173
 Emerson, Hope 6
 Emerson, Lydian Jackson (Mrs. Ralph Waldo)
 165
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo 165
 Emerson, Raymond
 43, 60, 65, 69, 177, 201, 207, 216
 Emerson, W. Ralph 173
 Emerson, William F. 6, 201
 Eustis, W. E. C. 144

F

- Fairhaven 17
Falkland H. M. S. 46
 Family Residences 168, 169, 221
 Farm Houses 21, 28-31, 59
 Farm Record, Vol. 1
 1, 94-110, 136-143, quoted throughout
 Farmer, S. M. 158
 Farming 42, 45, 76-83
 Farrand, Ruth L. 61
 Fauna and Flora, lists of 208-211
Fawn 48, 66, 186
Fawn, sloop 185, 187
 Fay, Joseph Story 96, 97, 184
 Federal Soil Conservation Commission 91
 Feldman, Major Harry G. 200, 201
 Fenger, Frederick 190
 Field, Fred W. 28
 Field House 169, 177
 Finances 220
 Fish 161, 162
 Fish, John H. 65, 161, 162
 Fisher, Captain Alonzo 192
 Fisher, Dr. 84, 110, 161
 Fisherman's Island 64, 71, 72
 Fishing Rock, Sarah Forbes 14
 Flanders, John 3
Flight 186
 Fogg, J. M., Jr. 214
 Forbes, Lord and Lady 111, 113
 Forbes, Alexander
 7, 43, 165, 169, 177, 190, 215
 Forbes, Alexander Irving 6

- Forbes, Alice H. (Mrs. Edward M. Cary)
 see Cary
 Forbes, Alice H. (Mrs. Weston Howland) 167
 Forbes, Amelia (Mrs. Raymond Emerson) 166
 Forbes, Amelia (Mrs. William Thomas)
 6, 27, 50, 89, 147, 148
 Forbes, Anne 6, 27, 49, 51, 169, 183
 Forbes, Cabot (Mrs. Ralph E.) 173, 176
 Forbes, David C. 6, 7, 177
 Forbes, Edith Emerson (Mrs. William H.)
 106, 165, 169, 176, 184, 208
 Forbes, Edith (Mrs. Kenneth G. T. Webster) 165
 Forbes, Edward W.
 7, 49, 118, 144, 151, 165, 169, 177, 180, 215
 Forbes, Elizabeth C. (Mrs. Lester Gordon) 6
 Forbes, Ellen (Mrs. Waldo E. Forbes)
 6, 7, 166, 172, 215
 Forbes, Ellen 165
 Forbes, Ellen Randolph 164
 Forbes, Elliot 6
 Forbes, Ethel C. (Mrs. Copley Amory, Jr.) 43
 Forbes, Ethel (Holly) (Mrs. Gonzalo Leon) 6
 Forbes Family 1, 167, 173
 Forbes, Florence E. 6
 Forbes, Gerrit 166
 Forbes, G. Donald 6
 Forbes, Dr. Henry S.
 65, 69, 73, 146, 151, 166, 169, 175, 215
 Forbes, Hester 167
 Forbes, Hoima M. (Mrs. Bernard Gaston
 Cherau) 6
 Forbes, Joan (Mrs. Niilo Koponen) 6
 Forbes, J. Malcolm (Commodore)
 5, 6, 7, 45, 68, 124, 164, 166, 174,
 188, 190, 215
 Forbes, J. Malcolm, Jr.
 7, 43, 65, 70, 146, 169, 175
 Forbes, J. Malcolm (Jock) 167
 Forbes, J. M. and Co. 1, 165, 166, 216, 223
 Forbes, John Murray, quoted and mentioned
 throughout
 Forbes, John M. (Don) 165
 Forbes, Margaret (Mrs. A. C. Klebs) 166
 Forbes, Marjory (Mrs. Peter Elias) 6
 Forbes, Mary H. (Mrs. Henry S. Russell)
 164, 166
 Forbes Paul S. 67
 Forbes, Pauline (Mrs. Alwin Pappenheimer) 6
 Forbes, Ralph E. 6, 7, 59, 65, 69, 124, 144, 151,
 160, 165, 169, 173, 176, 177, 180, 211, 215
 Forbes, Ralph M. 183
 Forbes, Robert Bennet 161, 187, 193-195
 Forbes, Rose D. (Mrs. J. Malcolm)
 6, 7, 66, 106, 166, 167, 174
 Forbes, Sarah (Mrs. W. Hastings Hughes)
 15, 164, 167
 Forbes, Sarah Jones (Mrs. J. Malcolm) 16, 166

- Hosmer, Henry B. 107
 Houqua 163
 Howard, George E. 28
 Howes, Ensign E. 27, 28, 54
 Howland, Alice Forbes (Mrs. Weston) 47, 48, 53, 66, 177, 215
 Howland, Hester A. 6
 Howland, Judith (Mrs. James C. Cook) 6
 Howland, Weston 215
 Huckins, Samuel 26
 Hughes, Dorothea M. (Mrs. David Simmons) 168, 215
 Hughes Family 168
 Hughes, John H. 6, 7
 Hughes, Sarah Forbes (Mrs. W. Hastings) 7, 62, 168, 172
 Hughes, Walter Scott 43, 48, 65, 168, 169, 182, 205
 Hughes, William Hastings 167, 168
 Hunt, Sam 170
 Hunter, William B. 26
 Hurricanes 1, 66, 70-72, 107, 119, 120, 126, 128, 175, 182, 183
 Hurricane Timber 119
- I
- Ice 58, 59
 Iduna 186, 218
 Indians 4, 20, 21, 22, 30
 Industry 193
 Ingraham, Benjamin 194, 195
 Insurance 219
- J
- James I, King 4
 Jannahquissou 22
 Jeep 60, 91, 108, 200, 201
 Jim Field 14, 22, 66, 90
 Job's Neck 14, 22
 Johnny Crapeau 13, 194, 195
 Johnny's Saloon 13
 Johnson, Asa 27
 Johnson, Dr. and Mrs. Robert E. 55, 169
 Jones, Emma C. 208
 Jones, Sarah Coffin (Mrs. J. Malcolm Forbes) see Forbes
 Jones, Thomas 114
 Joy, C. F. 14
- K
- Kalinga 190
 Kark, Dr. 51
 Kenrick, John 104, 105
 Kettle Cove 2, 17, 49
 King, Clarence 27, 50
 Knight, John (Master) 46
- L
- Lackey's Bay, 14, 176, mentioned frequently
 Ladd, William J. 157
 Lake, Ephraim 27, 42, 134
 Lake, Otis 26, 63, 81, 82, 84, 85, 96, 97, 156
 Lambert, F. H. 26, 57, 58
 Lambert J. H. 99
 Lambert Sheriff 122
 Land Improvement 77-83, 88-91
 Landing Field 43
 Lane, Miss 61
 Larousse, Dr. 74, 219
 Lawley, George 189
 Lechmere, Thomas 23, 93, 113
 Lewis, Alhira 28, 45
 Lichen Cottage 30, 169, 203
 Lighthouse, see Tarpaulin Cove
 Lindley, Gilbert 116
 Loco Motion (W.W.S.) 177, 178
 Look, D. C. 26, 159
 Loring, Captain William 18
 Luce, Joseph R. 28, 29, 46, 51
 Lucy, Robert 90
 Lumbert, Zaccheus 27, 29, 46, 51
- M
- Macomber, Henry P. 3
 Mangosteen 190
 Mansion House 56, 57, 164, 166, 168, 170-173, 179, mentioned frequently
 Mansion House Stable 196-198
 Manure 77-79
 Map, Naushon 123, 125, 127, 129, 131
 Maria Packet 171
 Marshall, General George C. 113
 Martha's Vineyard 3, 83, mentioned frequently
 Mary's Lake 58, 62, 63, 109, 161, mentioned frequently
 Massachusetts Bay Colony 3
 Massachusetts Department of Conservation 152, 153
 Massachusetts Dept. of Public Works 207
 Massachusetts Fish and Game Commission 152
 "Matilda McLane" 80
 Maury, George W. 28, 54
 Mayhew, B. F. 99
 Mayhew, Matthew 3, 4, 30, 93, 113
 Mayhew, Thomas 3, 4, 22, 28, 30, 38
 Mayhew, Thomas, Jr. 3, 4, 28, 30
 Mayhew, Tristram 3
 McCaffrey, Leonard 27, 183
 McClure, William 41
 McCrae, Captain 27, 43, 192
 McDermot, John 68
 McKeen, Joseph 8
 McKinstry, Moses 33
 McLeod, Norman 26
 McPhee, Angus 28, 54
 McQuarrie, Captain 189, 191
 Menhaden 83
 Memory Road 13, 218
 Merlin 167, 187, 190

| | | | |
|---|----------------------------------|--|--|
| Merihew, Roger | 27, 54 | Nye, John | 27, 47 |
| Merithew, George | 27, 28, 49 | Nye, Mrs. Lucy | 19 |
| Merrill, Edward | 3 | | |
| Mink Point | 66, 203 | O | |
| Molasses Pond | 64, 81, 82 | Old Colony R.R. | 184, 185, 205 |
| Molasses Pond Swamp | 81, 82 | Old Hope | 44 |
| Monardus, Dr. | 92 | Olsen, Captain Charles O. | 15, 16, 47, 48, 58, 70, 185, 191, 217, 219 |
| <i>Monohansett</i> | 63, 197 | Olsen, Mrs. Charles O. | 15, 219 |
| Monohansett Island | 64-66 | Olsen, John | 27, 28, 49, 54, 55, 217 |
| Monsod | 42, 43, 65, 66, 72, 169 | Olsted, Captain | 191 |
| Moonakie Factory | 141 | <i>Onawa</i> | 190 |
| Moore, Professor George F. | 88 | Onawa Cottage | 169 |
| Moose and Deer Act of 1789 | 150, 152 | <i>Onda</i> | 69, 185 |
| Morrisson, William H. | 26, 48, 61, 144 | Osmena, President Sergio | 111, 113 |
| Mosher, Henry | 28 | Oyster Shells | 124 |
| Mosquitoes | 73 | Oxen | 77-80, 115, 192 |
| Mt. Surat | 30, 66, 90, 169, 201, 203 | | |
| Muirhead & Holway | 73 | P | |
| Mules | 192-195 | Paine, Charles C. | 8 |
| | | Paine, General Charles J. | 190 |
| N | | Paine, Michael | 6 |
| Nantucket | 51 | Paine, Ruth Forbes (Mrs. Arthur Young) | 16, 65, 169 |
| <i>Nantucket</i> | 185 | Palmer, Benjamin | 27, 43 |
| Narrows, the | 17, 67, 68 | Palmer, Captain | 58 |
| Nashawena | 86, 139, 180, 181, 183, 188, 200 | Pamchamnuit | 22 |
| Naushon | mentioned throughout | Park, Franklin | 181 |
| <i>Naushon</i> | 45, 63, 185 | Parker, Cotton | 184 |
| Naushon Estate | 8, 38, 45 | Parker, Joseph | 40, 41, 205 |
| Naushon Farm | 56-60 | Parker, Mr. and Mrs. Ward M. | 8, 9 |
| Naushon Game Association | 159, 160 | Parkers Point | 184 |
| Naushon Schools | 20, 21, 61 | Parme, Captain Eli | 18 |
| Naushon Trust | 3-6, 219 | Pasque | 26, 39, 55, 180-183 |
| <i>Nautilus</i> | 190 | Pastures | 89-92, mentioned frequently |
| New Bedford, Martha's Vineyard and | | Passasuit | 20-22 |
| Nantucket S.S. Co. | 45, 205 | Paving Stones | 86 |
| New Bedford Steamers, list of | 184, 185 | Peaked Rock Hill | 13 |
| Newell, Miss Nancy | 31 | Pehtauattooh | 22 |
| New England, Council for | 4 | Penzance | 181-183, 216 |
| New England Telephone and Telegraph Co. | 181, 182 | Perkins, James and Thomas Handasyde | 58, 163 |
| Newkit | 15, 42, 43, 65, 108, 169 | Perkins, T. Nelson | 219 |
| Newkit Stable | 199 | <i>Permelia</i> | 188 |
| "Newsboy" | 184 | Pershing Grove | 13 |
| New York | 3 | Pershing General John J. | 13, 198 |
| New York, New Haven and Hartford R.R. Co. | 206 | Pest Control | 72-75 |
| Nichols, Colonel Richard | 4 | Peterson, Captain Andrew | 190, 191 |
| Nickerson, Nahum | 26 | Peterson, Frank | 28, 49, 179 |
| Nickerson, Walter | 49 | Phillips, Dr. | 117 |
| Nobska Point | 8, 201 | Phillipsdale, R. I. | 119 |
| Nonamesset | 2, 38-44, mentioned throughout | Phinney, Captain Nymphus | 191 |
| Nonamesset House | 29, 39, 43, 48, 169 | Picnic Places | 17, 64 |
| Nonamesset House Wharf | 65 | Pierce, Peleg | 28, 45 |
| North Pasture | 90, 169, 173, 176, 203 | Piepgrass, Henry | 188 |
| Northwest Gutter | 78 | Pine Garden | 13, 40, 66, 97-99, 101, 105 |
| Norton, Captain | 27, 43, 189, 191 | Pine Island | 71 |
| Norton, Captain Richard | 16, 27, 192 | Pines | 94-99, 103, 104, 106, 107 |
| Notarantonio, Luis | 119 | Place Names, list of | 10-14 |
| Nye, Captain Elisha | 19, 27, 46 | Plant List | 208-211 |

- Plaque (Bulls Neck) 17
 Play House 219
Poland 195
 Pond, Mr. 151
 Pony Pasture 14, 166, 168, 175, 176, 215
 Pope, Mr. 28
 Porpoise Experiment 44
 Price, Ephraim 41
 Providence, R. I. 86
Puritan 167, 188
 Pusey, Jones & Co. 189
- Q
- Quaquaquinnegat 22
 Quincy, Josiah 39
 Quisset Avenue Trust 207
- R
- Raleigh, Sir Walter 113
Rambler 167, 188
 Ram Cat Alley 13
 Ram's Head 102
 Randall, George 83
 Rare Shell 213, 214
 Rathbun, Mr. 107
 Rattlesnake Neck 100
 Raup, Professor 107
 Ray, Caleb 24, 27, 133, 150, 156
 Read, John 134
 Reed, Allen H. 54, 72
 Reed, S. H. 99
 Report of W. Cameron Forbes (1928) 214-221
Retaliation H.M.S. 134
 Richards, Mr. 179
 Richardson, Henry H. 175
 Ridge House 169, 177
 Riggs, Lawrason, (III) 7
 Roads 120-132, 218
 Roads, list of 130-132
 Road Repairs 124, 126, 128, 130
Roamer 186, 218
 Robinson, Alexander 26
 Robinson, Cornelius 19, 26
 Robinson Family 19, 25, 26
 Robinson, Irvin 26
 Robinson, Isaac 19, 26, 30, 49, 134
 Robinson, James 25, 26, 52
 Robinson, John 49
 Robinson, Joseph 24, 25, 27, 38, 49
 Robinson, J. C. 141, 142
 Robinson, Joshua 142
 Robinson, Louisa 32
 Robinson, Mary 19, 26
 Robinson, Paul 26, 27, 39, 93
 Robinson, Peter 26
 Robinson, Polly 27, 33, 39
 Robinson, Samuel 25-27, 30, 39, 47, 52, 170
 Robinson, Seth 25, 26, 28-30, 33, 34, 45, 52, 54, 136
- Robinson, Shadrach 25, 27, 47, 49, 54
 Robinson, Stephen 26, 28, 194
 Robinson, Thomas 25, 26, 52
 Robinson, William 26, 28, 32, 52, 54
 Robinson, William A. 26, 27, 48, 49, 72, 88
 Robinson, William J. 48, 49
 Robinson, Zepheniah 25, 26, 29, 30, 45, 52
 Robinson's Hole 54
 Rolphe, Mr. 61
 Ronebee, Matthew 25
 Rotch, William 56
 Rowley, Elnathan 27
 Russell, Annie (Mrs. H. O. Apthorp) 166
 Russell Boat House 169
 Russell & Co. 163
 Russell, Ellen F. (Mrs. Edward Atkinson) 166
 Russell, Henry Sturgis (Colonel) 166, 169, 175
 Russell, Henry S. 6
 Russell, Howland Shaw 166
 Russell, James Savage 57, 58, 157, 166, 168
 169, 175, 176, 179, 186, 196, 199, 215
 Russell, John F. 6
 Russell, J. S., stable 199
 Russell, Madeleine B. (Mrs. James S.) 126
 Russell, Mary Forbes (Mrs. Henry S.) 5, 168, 169, 175, 176, 215
 Russell, Mary F. (Mrs. Copley Amory) 166, 176
 Russell, Robert S. 6
 Russell, Sally 156
 Russell, Susan W. (Mrs. S. B. Hoyt) 6
 Rye Field 13
- S
- Sahara* 69, 190
 Sailor's Free Reading Room 48, 49
 Salt Production 40-42, 44, 45
 Samson, Thomas 8, 21, 22
 Sassafras 92, 93, 107, 113
 Sawtelle, William 15
 Scheville, Mr. and Mrs. William E. 44
 Scott, Daniel D. 199
 Scow 78
Seal 183
 Seayk Sachem 4, 22, 38
 Seckitchakoman, Abigail 22
Senorita 186
 Sentinel Tree 107
Shearwater 188
Sheep 133-147, 218, mentioned frequently
Shelldrake 69, 186
 Shepard, George 177
 Shepherd's Cottage 29, 59
 Sheridan, General Philip H. 166
 Shiverick, Samuel 24
 Shore House 169, 177
 Shore House Stable 198
 Shreve, John 27
 Simmons, Dorothea Hughes (Mrs. David) 169

- W
- Wainright, Captain 191
Walcott, Senator L. C. 160
Wardwell, Mr. 145
Ware, Miss Emma 124
Washamwatt 22
Waterhouse Dr. 8
Watson, Dr. Francis S. 12, 113
Ways 64, 66, 69, 219
Webacowett 22
Webster, Daniel 14
Webster, Edith Forbes (Mrs. Kenneth G. T.)
 see Forbes
Weekes, John
 9, 21, 22, 24-26, 30, 38, 53, 93, 113, 133
Weekes, William 24-26, 30, 38
Weeks, Captain 191
Weeks, George 28, 52
Wells 61-63
Weepecket Islands 2, 8, 9, 17, 98, 160
West End 53-55, mentioned frequently
West End House 29, 53, 54, 85, 169
West End Hunting Lodge 175
West End Pond
 48, 54, 84, 161, 175, mentioned frequently
West, Captain Norman 192
Western Union Telegraph Co. 179
Westport 185
Whale 186
Wharves 63-72, mentioned frequently
White, Abraham C. 26, 27, 56, 141, 142
White Cap 165, 185, 187
White Cap Cottage 30, 169
White Cloud 16
Wicks, Dr. 8
Wilbur, Abiatha 95
Wilcox, Horace 28, 45, 54, 84, 85
Wilcox, Nathaniel 28
Wild Duck 15, 16, 64, 174, 189
Wild Duck Wharf 15, 16, 64, 65, 67
Wild & Hosmer 36
Willis, Jonah 138, 141
Wilson, Pilot 52
Windmill 16, 17, 33
Winifred 71
Winslow, Mr. 94, 95
Winthrop Family 1, 2, 3
Winthrop Fitz-John 22
Winthrop, John (F. R. S.)
 4, 5, 21-23, 25, 30, 38, 93, 205
Winthrop, John (Governor) 4
Winthrop & Sullivan 114, 116, 117
Winthrop, Thomas Lindall 2, 40, 93, 114, 135
Winthrop, Wait 4, 9, 21-25, 30, 38, 93, 113,
 135, 136, 156, mentioned throughout
Withington, Phineas 33
Wolbach, Professor Bert 73
Woodard, Nancy (Mrs. Walter) 32-34
Woodard, Walter 26, 31, 32, 34, 35, 114-117
Wood Cutting 37, 113-119
Wood, Fred W. 159, 160
Wood Ticks 73-75
Wood Tick Experiment 73-75, 219
Woods Hole 70, 205
Woods Hole Oceanographic Institution
 43, 44, 66, 203, 204
Woods Hole Property 204-207, 217
Woods Hole Trust 207
World War I & II 200
Wyer, C. & Co. 138
Wyman, Professor Jeffries 164
- Y
- Yachts, list of 187-190
York, Duke of 4

SUPPLEMENT, 1984

Page 18. *Stone in Lighthouse Enclosure*

Besides the three handsome engraved headstones in the Tarpaulin Cove graveyard, there are about a dozen simple graves, some of them hard to find under the encroaching vegetation. The oldest date is 1768, inscribed together with initials on a rough fieldstone. A group of children's graves lies toward the western edge. There is no record of who is buried in these.

Next to Judith Gane's impressive gravestone in the Lighthouse Enclosure is a small rectangular stone with the initials J (?) G. Assuming that these initials stand for Joseph Gane, he may have been husband or son. The latter is more likely considering Judith Gane's age. This is, however, conjecture, as unfortunately there are no records of Lighthouse keepers between 1818 and 1852.

In an open glade...

In a glade near the Swain graves, stones have been placed in memory of J. Malcolm Forbes, Copley Amory, Ethel Cummings (Forbes) Amory, Eric Schroeder, and a daughter of William and Beryl Eddy.

Page 27. *Captain McCrae.*

Occupants of the Nonamesset Farrn in the early 1900's included Edward Westbury and John Nelson, both of whom were in charge of the Uncatena wharf and boats. The Nelsons shared the house with Captain Hansen.

Page 48. *...sealed up for perhaps fifty years.*

Alice F. Howland remembers that the fireplace on Captain Hansen's side of the Nonamesset House (the west side) was boarded up. Hoima Cherau says that there is the foundation of a very big chimney in the cellar at Tarpaulin, so Captain Olsen's story seems to be accurate.

Page 50. *...her occupation of the Cove.*

The last paragraph should read:

1944 Amelia F. Thomas had taken on the Island sheep in the fall of 1943 on a two-year arrangement with the Trustees, and had imported 70 head of Hereford cattle. Having asked the Trustees for the use of the Cove Farm for at least one year, taking on the caretaking duties there, she moved in just before the September 14th hurricane hit the Island. Walls, gates, and trees were blown down, also one shed and the skylight off the roof. Amelia was unable to "keep all the roads open," but hired both friends and strangers to chop and saw and clear the main arteries, all of which were blocked by downed trees. At first the only way to get east was to ride a sure-footed horse along the shore, swimming round the end of the wall if the tide was high. Sheep and cattle had to be moved away from salted ponds as far as Crane Pond to keep them from drifting west again — a lengthy and sometimes impossible

NAUSHON DATA

job through fallen woods. Difficulties of transportation and communication continued to be so great that in the fall of 1945 Amelia did not renew her sheep contract or agree to continue caretaking duties. She recommended that the Cove house be empty from November to March while there are virtually no boats on the water, because too much human energy and expense were needed to keep the Cove household in operation.

1945 In February the Coast Guard sent men to dismantle the Lighthouse-keepers house and take out the plumbing.

Page 51. *...has summer occupancy.*

1984 For a good many years now the Cove has been kept up and occupied by Hoima Cherau and her family.

Page 52. *...is serviced in Woods Hole.*

The house fell into complete disrepair and was razed in 1961/62.

1977 The four acres of land at the lighthouse, no longer needed by the U.S. Government, were taken over by the Massachusetts Department of Fisheries and Wildlife as a sanctuary and research station under joint management with the Naushon Trustees.

Page 55. *...at the old house at Pasque.*

John Olsen came to Naushon first as boatswain on the *Merlin* and then as boatman for James Russell's *Falcon*. He and his wife, Lilly, lived at the Cove, the West End, and then Pasque, where John Olsen died in December 1963. On a hill overlooking Robinson's Hole some of the family put a bronze plaque appropriately inscribed in his memory.

Page 59. *Old cow barn rebuilt.*

1958 Walpole Cottage built on Main Road just southwest of the Farm buildings, for use of staff. Later enlarged.

1961 Sheep Pond Cottage built below and west of the Stone House for use by the Captain of the Bobolink Wharf.

1962 Farm Lane #2 house built for the Superintendent, opposite Walpole Cottage.

Page 60. *...past ten years are not described.*

1974 A wood chipper was loaned to the Island by John Hughes, and it has been very useful.

1984 The Island's rolling stock now consists of five tractors, two pickup trucks, one ancient jeep, and a fire truck (bought from the Woods Hole Fire

SUPPLEMENT, 1984

Department); as well as numerous pieces of auxiliary equipment, including two manure spreaders and the recent gift of a flail for use in cutting back the ever-encroaching catbrier, poison ivy, and barberry.

Page 60. *A new generator was bought.*

1961 Two 8,000 gallon fuel tanks were installed on the hill behind the power plant, permitting gravity feed to the diesel generator and to the portable tanks used to fill the fuel tanks that supply the house furnaces. These tanks are supplied by a pipeline from the Upper Wharf where an oil barge periodically pumps in fuel oil.

1970 New 90 KW Caterpillar replaced the aging one installed in 1951.

1974 Two new Caterpillar diesel generators (60 KW each) were bought to replace the old ones.

1983 A Lister diesel generator (31 KW) was bought for use at the Farm in the off-season, resting the two larger units during the period of reduced demand.

Page 63. *...pretend to be complete.*

1962 A new well was driven on the bluff northeast of the Stone House near the Northwest Gutter.

WINDMILLS

By 1900 there were two windmills for pumping water at Uncatena, one near the tennis court and another beside the barn. A windmill to pump water for the Stone House was on the hill west of the Bobolink Wharf.

Page 67. *...attached to summer residences.*

1969 Sheep Pen Cove, Mink Point. New shed built and the wharf rebuilt.

1969 The Bobolink Wharf with its equipment and appurtenances was turned over to the Naushon Trustees for the use of Shareholders and Island residents.

1972 The Upper Wharf was largely reconstructed. (This wharf was formerly called the Coryell Wharf, occasionally the Inner Upper Wharf.)

1982 A new structure was built at Bobolink Wharf for use as a repair shop for outboard motors.

1984 New decking installed on Uncatena Wharf, Newkit Wharf, and Harbor Cottage Wharf.

NAUSHON DATA

Page 71. *Hurricanes*

1924 A hurricane struck the Island in August after three days of heavy rain. It was short-lived but violent, coming from the northwest and laying low a swath of trees from the vicinity of the Green Gate Wall across to the South Shore.

1938 was the year of the hurricane which swept the *Winifred* onto the Bobolink Wharf.

Page 72. ...again badly battered.

Although it seemed that the forest would never recover, nature has re-asserted herself, and except for some blow-downs and areas of thickly crowded new growth, the forest *has* come back and regained much of its former beauty. Monohansett is still almost denuded of trees as efforts to replant have had little success. The trees that stood between the Veckatimest and Calf Pasture Houses and the shore went down for ever.

Page 92. ...grow there profusely.

1958-1984 In the years since 1957, applications of lime and sometimes fertilizer were made but seldom recorded. In 1966 and 1967 several hundred tons of lime were applied on pastures including Nonamessett Farm, Newkit House Pasture, Jim Field, Calf Pasture, North Pasture, Uncatena House Pasture, and Sheep Pen. In 1969 we received 237 tons of lime for later application to the pastures. It was noted that an unwelcome number of Canada geese are attracted to fertilized pastures.

Page 118. ...clearing unsaleable wood.

With the growing interest in energy conservation, about ten wood stoves have been installed in various houses on the Island during the past several years. Two family members cut 28 cords of firewood and stored them under cover in the farm area. At the current rate of use, this is sufficient for three years.

Page 128. *All bridges...*

1983 The wooden beams of Third Bridge were found to be in very serious condition, and they, and the deck and railings, were replaced. The steel beams appear to be in good condition.

Page 148. ...she decided not to renew.

Report on sheep by Amelia Thomas:

| | | | | | |
|------|-------------------|------|----------------|------|----------------|
| 1943 | 464 sheep sheared | 1944 | 465 sheared | 1945 | 480 sheared |
| | 131 lambs | | 178 lambs | | 158 lambs |
| | 1695 lbs. wool | | 2047 lbs. wool | | 1550 lbs. wool |

Amelia got rid of every ram and ram lamb and used only Cheviots which she purchased for breeding. Her purpose was to have the hardiest mutton type of sheep which would do well at lambing unattended. Records show the wool holding up well in the next years, while the lamb percentages rose from 47% to 72% in five years and were still at 60% in 1950. Selling of lambs rose from zero in 1943 to a regular lamb crop of up to 200, for the next eight years.

Page 150. ...its pastoral character.

Sheep drives served the purpose of getting in all sheep in June for shearing, dipping, sorting and culling, and again in early September, for separating out the rams and further culling. As the family increased and scattered, drives had an important function in uniting the family for an event seen as a contribution to the Island. Families came together for picnics, square dancing, sings, and other festivities.

For many years sheepings were carried out by organized divisions of horseman, but after the 1944 hurricane the woods were impassable for horses and divisions of footpads took on an increasingly important role. Although the sheep operation lost money, the family were generally strongly in favor of keeping sheep: they had value as an agricultural endeavor, were a possible tax advantage, united the family through sheepings and in maintaining walls, fences and roads, and they were a tradition. In 1966 a new fence was built by the family across the island, west of Mary's Lake, in an effort to control grazing areas. Two new gates were named the Plaid and the Sapphire.

After the arrival of Warren Ford, an experienced sheep man from Montana, the flock was reduced to about 150. Grain was fed at breeding and lambing time, and hay in winter. Lambing was carefully attended, in pens under the old Hay Barn, in some years with help from a family member who stayed at the Farm: Nellie Singer, Tally Frothingham and Paula Leon. Corriedale rams of good quality were used and breeding carefully controlled. During this period a good market for Naushon lambs was developed with top prices paid. There was great improvement in amount of wool per sheep and quality, and in percentage of lambs. Costs rose, too. Those sheep remaining in the West End became very wild and have prospered. A "sheeptrap" built by a family crew in 1969 has been occasionally used to catch small bands which are then sold.

Scattered statistics show that in 1960, 347 sheep were shorn and gave 3.75 lbs. of wool per sheep, with a lamb crop of 160. In 1977, 125 ewes produced 155 lambs and sheared about 6 lbs. each.

In 1970, Ruth Brazier and Holly Leon, later joined by Ginny Gregg, started the Elizabeth Islands Yarn Project. Instead of selling to the Boston wool pool, they sent the wool to a scouring mill, then to Harmony, Maine, for spinning into yarn, which was sold to family, friends and shops, mainly on the Vineyard, in Falmouth, and in

NAUSHON DATA

Concord. Raw fleeces were sold to hand spinners, those from the black sheep bringing a premium price.

By the time Warren Ford retired in 1982, he had succeeded in greatly improving the quality of the flock. Old hay fields had been brought back into production and new ones created. He had worked as full-time summer horseback patrol, effectively keeping off trespassers while making friends for the Island of the legitimate beach users. On one occasion he found two young men skulking about the West End, who took off on seeing him in the distance and hearing his hail. Warren went after them at a gallop, running them into the bushes, where he lassoed one of them. However, his approach was more likely to be a gentle and courteous one. Farm hand, Assistant Superintendent, and for one year Acting Superintendent, Warren was respected and loved to an extraordinary degree by those who knew him.

Starting about 1970, under the guidance of Warren Ford, the flock was improved by selective selling and buying, using chiefly Corriedales as replacement stock. Except for about 50 wild sheep on the west end of the Island, the flock was kept fairly well under control in various areas. The old three-day sheepdrives, involving as many as 50 to 80 people, have given way to small parties, herding the flock into an enclosure in a matter of hours. New facilities, including a sheep creep located west of the North Pasture, and conversion of a storage shed and hay barn into quarters designed for lambing, have improved the operation considerably. The new location is sunnier, dryer and vastly more convenient. The total number of sheep has decreased from 662 in 1963 to 220 in 1983. The number of lambs has increased from less than one per ewe to 1.55 per ewe in the same period, and the quality of wool and meat is superior. The better results are due in part to better handling of the sheep and in part to the improvements made to several pastures by spreading lime and manure.

Page 153. ...*Conservation personnel.*

After 1957, as in the years following 1951, the deer hunts have continued under the direction of David C. Forbes. From 1969 to 1971 the state prohibited the hunting of does, but since then permits to shoot does have been provided. From 1966 to 1983 the policy of shooting does only was followed in an attempt to reduce the herd. As no noticeable diminution could be detected, the policy in 1983 was merely to encourage the taking of does rather than bucks.

Page 159. ...*still many on the Island.*

1925 All foxes were eliminated; it was not until after Buzzards Bay froze over in 1959 that signs of foxes re-appeared. Since then fox holes, tracks, and sightings have become common. In return for our turkeys, we received 21 wild trapped quail. In two years they had become numerous and were found as far out as

SUPPLEMENT, 1984

the Western Hills. Recently their numbers have greatly diminished, presumably due to predators.

In 1979 the last of the Naushon turkeys died.

1983 A small camp was discovered just west of the French Watering Place near the beach. It was ascertained that two poachers had been trapping fox and had killed at least one deer and one sheep. The men, who came over from Martha's Vineyard, were identified and prosecuted by the game warden.

Patrols. For the past 20 years it has become advisable to have the Island patrolled, and this has been done by the following, usually on horseback, sometimes by jeep: Jim Cole, Warren Ford, Dwight Hamilton. Their relations with the public whom they have met in this connection have been uniformly good, and this may well be why we have had almost no incidents of unwelcome trespassing.

Page 162. ...concerning Game and Fish.

1984 Freshwater Fish: Bass, perch, and pickerel continued to be caught in Mary's Lake, and bass and perch in the West End Pond during the 1960s and '70s. The level of Mary's Lake dropped alarmingly during the drought in the late '60s, resulting in a period of warm water and thick plant growth. This may have affected the natural balance because reports of game fish caught have diminished. Catfish from an unknown source have become plentiful. The West End Pond was apparently less affected, although eels, not previously reported, have been caught in recent years. Silver perch were caught in French Watering Place in the early '50s, but recent efforts to catch them have been unsuccessful. Fish from other ponds have not been reported.

Saltwater Fish: Changes have also been apparent in the numbers and species caught in recent years. This is perhaps due to human influence by way of commercial fishing or chemical pollution, or to natural cycles in water temperatures and sea currents. The puff fish, common in the Harbor some thirty years ago, has disappeared. Alerts of Red Tide, which affects shellfish, have not been uncommon in parts of the Cape during the last two decades. Mussels became rare during the same period but appear to be coming back. Striped bass have become uncommon, especially the smaller sizes that would school in large numbers for fall migrations. On the other hand, bluefish are now plentiful, and have been caught as late as November around Naushon. Whatever the causes, whatever the changes to come in the future, the fascination and excitement of hooking a fish and of eating it freshly caught and cooked remain the same.

NAUSHON DATA

Page 168. ...*their Naushon heritage.*

FAMILY TREE

In the summer of 1977 when many descendants of John Murray Forbes and Sarah Swain Forbes were on Naushon meeting cousins, and becoming much confused about the relationships, it seemed obvious that a large family tree would be useful. In February 1978 the work was started by Florence F. Locke, using as a guide the Genealogical Index of the J.M.F. family edited by Edith W. Gregg. In July the Tree was mounted in the Shore House Barn hayloft on a white homeosote wall, 9' x 52'. The Tree, made of name-cards, and yarn in four colors for the four principal family groups, started at top center with J.M.F. and S.S.F., and grew downwards showing six generations, each on a different level.

Starting with J.M.F. and S.S.F.'s marriage in 1834, the total span of years was 144. The total number of descendants was 368. Fifty had died, leaving 318 living descendants. In 1984 the descendants total just over 400, with nine in the seventh generation. Fifty-eight are deceased, leaving about 342 living. Some descendants are unaccounted for.

A display of photographs of descendants and spouses was also started on the opposite wall, and continues to grow.

Each year the number of visitors to the Tree has grown. During 1983 there were nearly 400.

Page 169. ...*considered a summer residence.*

1966 The Goat Shed, a semi-bunk house on Goat's Neck facing First Bridge, was built for short-term family use.

Page 173. ...*on December 24th, 1959.*

After W.C.F.'s death the size of the Mansion House was much reduced, to be manageable for smaller households than his had been. The tower was completely removed, and most of the enlarged West Wing.

...*still in use (1960).*

In 1961 the *Hesper's* mast was struck by lightning and totally destroyed.

Page 175. ...*northwest of the Lodge.*

On the night of July 3, 1924 a fire of unknown origin had destroyed the older barn. No horses were in it, and carriages and tack were rescued.

SUPPLEMENT, 1984

Page 177. ...taken by David C. Forbes.

Tenants of the Ridge House before D.C. Forbes had been the Harry Forbeses and the Ward Greggs. The current lessees are the Joe Frothinghams and the Irving Forbeses.

Page 180. ...extended to Uncatena.

Mrs. Malcolm Forbes did not want a telephone in the house, so a small box with a bell and crank was installed on a wall of the barn. If a message came to the Farm for Uncatena, a call would be made to the box, and then someone would go to the Farm to get it. Later Mrs. Forbes relented so far as having the telephone in the "butler's" pantry before it eventually came to the Main House. When the Lodge became a separate unit an instrument on a different line was put in there.

Page 183. All able-bodied men...

Those involved with the laying of the cable were Anne Forbes, Ralph Forbes, Roger and Kit Gregg, and Oliver Brazier.

...service has been planned.

When the submarine cable began losing circuits it was decided to install a new 52 pair cable. Armored submarine cable was no longer available off the shelf, and the price of a special order was extremely high. A lighter weight cable was installed by Island personnel and has been in service since then. However, due to its light weight, it was more susceptible to erosion and began to lose circuits. The use of microwave telephone communication was examined in 1984. If it appears to be physically and economically feasible, it should eliminate the headaches the Island has been suffering with submerged cable.

Some years ago dial telephones were introduced to the Island, the number series beginning with 8000.

Page 185. ...on the way down."

Captain Olsen used to put the Forbes flag up in the bow of the *Coryell* returning from his Friday evening trip to meet the "Dude," if J. Malcolm Forbes was on board; this was so that Mrs. Forbes would know and would be on the wharf to meet him.

Page 186. ...proved very satisfactory.

1964 A wooden launch named the *Charles Olsen* in affectionate memory of Captain Olsen, who had served our family faithfully and well for 55 years, was built in Quincy to designs by Mr. Walter McInnis. She was 49 ft. long, had an enclosed cabin, and was powered by two Westerbeke diesels.

NAUSHON DATA

The *Sentinel*, a sturdy 30 footer built by Gronros of Rockland, Maine, was bought, powered by a Westerbeke diesel, to act as an auxiliary to the *Charles Olsen*. She is still in service, but is definitely showing her age.

Page 190. ...designed by B. Crowninshield.

This entry should read:

1909-1947 *Black Duck*, 64 ft. overall, 46 ft. waterline. She was built for Waldo and Alexander Forbes and Kenneth Webster, and designed by B.B. Crowninshield. She was used chiefly by Alexander Forbes, and she sailed to Nova Scotia and Maine, and twice raced to Bermuda.

Page 192. *Captain Richard Alberts...*

Captain Alberts left in 1961 and was followed by Captain William C. Eaton. Eaton commanded the *Fawn* till 1964; then the *Charles Olsen* till 1980; then the *Cormorant*; also the *Sentinel* and the *Barge Whale*.

IN CHARGE OF BOBOLINK WHARF...

Later Captains of Bobolink were Gilbert Crofts, Leon Gibson, and at present Everett Jouett.

Page 199. "...who could drive on shoes..."

In 1983 the cost of four horseshoes was \$38.00.

STABLE DEPARTMENT

After the death of W.C. Forbes in 1959, the Mansion House Stable was set up under Trustee Operations as a new department, managed by Peter Bundy under the supervision of a committee. Community, Stone House, and North Pasture Stables were included in this department. Proceeds came from boarding horses, renting out horses by the hour, riding lessons, and deliveries. The Stable Department met the boat and delivered groceries, mail, and baggage, with horses only at first, later by tractor also.

From 1961 to 1976, Ray and Jean Dunphy were the backbone of the Stable, living in the Shepherd's Cottage with their four children. In 1967 there were 29 horses boarded over the winter, with about 45 horses, island-wide, in the summer. By 1972 there were 11 individually-owned family horses and 7 Stable horses. The present number is fewer.

The Stable Department eventually came under Farm direction, with an Advisory Committee which at present consists of Frances Forbes, Buffy Colt and Judy

Gregg. The W.H. Forbes heirs took over the upkeep of the Stone House Stable to be used for storage. Island stables continuing to operate in summer are at Monsod, Newkit, Uncatena, Nonamesset, Tarpaulin Cove and Shore House.

In 1979 Debbie Fairhurst came to work in the Stables. She became Stable Department manager two years later.

In 1983 the old Dance Hall next to the Mansion House was removed and a small stable with an enclosure was erected in its place.

Page 205. ...*facilities for the Island.*

The land on Quisset Avenue proved inadequate for parking and was sold, the proceeds being used for the purchase of a more suitable piece of property beyond the Coast Guard Station on Hinckley Road. The cottage on this property is rented. Another lot, owned by a family member, is used for parking 30 to 40 Island cars. These two areas, together with the space at the Woods Hole Landing, bring the total available parking space to about 80 cars, still an inadequate amount for the demand at the height of the season.

Page 208. ...*a non-scientific and purely amateur list...*

1984 Amphibians and reptiles at Naushon (excluding sea-turtles):

| <i>Amphibians:</i> | <i>Reptiles:</i> | |
|----------------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| Spotted salamander | Snapping turtle | Garter snake |
| Woodland salamander | Painted turtle | Black racer |
| Four-toed salamander | Box turtle | Green snake |
| Green frog | Spotted turtle | King snake |
| Fowler's toad | (Red-bellied turtle — | Ring-neck snake |
| Grey treefrog | no confirmation of this | Ribbon snake |
| Spring peeper | endangered species) | De Kay's snake |

For accounts of herpetologizing on Naushon and elsewhere see James D. Lazell's *This Broken Archipelago* (New York, 1976).

Mammals at Naushon (excluding cetaceans):

| | | |
|--------------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| Mole* | Red fox | Meadow vole |
| Short-tailed shrew | Feral cat | Muskrat |
| Large brown bat | Harbor seal | Norway rat |
| Raccoon | Red squirrel* | House mouse |
| Mink* | Gray squirrel* | Cottontail rabbit |
| River otter* | White-footed mouse | Whitetail deer |

*No recent records.

NAUSHON DATA

Page 209. List from Botany of Naushon...

The plant list printed here is curious, but not useful. Some spellings are incorrect, nothing is identified by species, some impossible plants are listed. Botanical and common names are duplicated in a confusing manner. It is hard to guess how it was made up, certainly not by a serious botanist.

The following comments are contributed by Hoima Cherau:

Since the first recorded collection made by a Miss Weir in 1890, about 600 species of vascular (higher) plants have been collected on Naushon and adjacent islands. Of these, 500 are native, the rest either adventives or deliberately introduced. These figures do not include arboretum or garden material. They do include 300 "wild flowers," 23 aquatics, 85 sedges and rushes, 13 ferns, 60 grasses and approximately 100 trees, shrubs and vines. Two plants on the Rare and Endangered Species list in Massachusetts occur abundantly on Naushon — *Helianthemum dumosum* (bushy rock-rose) and *Aristida purpurascens* (purple needle-grass).

Page 213. 1983. BIRDS OF NAUSHON

At least 250 bird species have been reported at one time or another from Naushon or nearby waters. Rather than list all of these it seemed more useful to record those likely to be seen on the island in summer or winter. The many migrants of spring and fall, and the numerous occasional visitors have been excluded. A day or two of birding should yield most of those listed as well as other rare or irregular species. The names and their sequence are from the 6th edition of the American Ornithologists Union checklist (and recent field guides).

* denotes irregular or declining numbers.

| | |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| Winter birds: | Hooded Merganser |
| Common Loon | Common Merganser |
| Horned Grebe | Red-breasted Merganser |
| Red-necked Grebe | Northern Harrier |
| Great Cormorant | Sharp-shinned Hawk |
| Great Blue Heron | Red-tailed Hawk |
| Mute Swan | American Kestrel |
| Canada Goose | Northern Bobwhite |
| American Black Duck | Bonaparte's Gull |
| Mallard | Ring-billed Gull |
| Common Eider | Herring Gull |
| Oldsquaw | Iceland Gull |
| Black Scoter | Great Black-backed Gull |
| Surf Scoter | Mourning Dove |
| White-winged Scoter | Belted Kingfisher |
| Common Goldeneye | Downy Woodpecker |
| Bufflehead | Hairy Woodpecker |

SUPPLEMENT, 1984

Northern Flicker
Blue Jay
American Crow
Black-capped Chickadee
Tufted Titmouse
Red-breasted Nuthatch
White-breasted Nuthatch
Carolina Wren
Golden-crowned Kinglet
Hermit Thrush
American Robin
Northern Mockingbird
European Starling
Yellow-rumped Warbler
Northern Cardinal
Rufous-sided Towhee
American Tree Sparrow
Swamp Sparrow
White-throated Sparrow
Dark-eyed Junco
Eastern Meadowlark*
Common Grackle
House Finch
House Sparrow
Summer birds:
Common Loon
Double-crested Cormorant
Great Blue Heron
Snowy Egret
Green-backed Heron
Black-crowned Night-Heron
Mute Swan
Canada Goose
American Black Duck
Mallard
Common Eider
Red-breasted Merganser
Osprey
Northern Harrier
Red-tailed Hawk
American Kestrel

Northern Bobwhite
Semipalmated Plover
Piping Plover
Greater Yellowlegs
Spotted Sandpiper
Ruddy Turnstone
Semipalmated Sandpiper
Least Sandpiper
American Woodcock*
Laughing Gull
Ring-billed Gull
Herring Gull
Great Black-backed Gull
Roseate Tern
Common Tern
Least Tern
Mourning Dove
Black-billed Cuckoo
Great Horned Owl
Whip-poor-will*
Chimney Swift*
Ruby-throated Hummingbird
Belted Kingfisher
Downy Woodpecker
Hairy Woodpecker
Northern Flicker
Eastern Wood-Pewee
Great Crested Flycatcher
Eastern Kingbird
Tree Swallow
N. Rough-winged Swallow
Bank Swallow
Barn Swallow
Blue Jay
American Crow
Black-capped Chickadee
Tufted Titmouse
White-breasted Nuthatch
Carolina Wren
House Wren
Veery
Wood Thrush

NAUSHON DATA

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------|
| American Robin | Common Yellowthroat |
| Gray Catbird | Northern Cardinal |
| Northern Mockingbird | Rufous-sided Towhee |
| Brown Thrasher | Savannah Sparrow |
| Cedar Waxwing* | Grasshopper Sparrow |
| European Starling | Song Sparrow |
| White-eyed Vireo | Red-winged Blackbird |
| Red-eyed Vireo | Eastern Meadowlark* |
| Northern Parula | Common Grackle |
| Yellow Warbler | Brown-headed Cowbird |
| Prairie Warbler | Northern Oriole |
| Black-and-white Warbler | Purple Finch* |
| American Redstart | American Goldfinch |
| Ovenbird | House Sparrow |

Pelagic species. May be seen from boats, rarely from shore:

| | |
|--------------------|-----------------------|
| Cory's Shearwater | Wilson's Storm-Petrel |
| Greater Shearwater | Parasite Jaeger |
| Sooty Shearwater | |

These lists were made up by Jeremy Hatch.

Page 223. Sources...

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Reminiscences.* John Murray Forbes. Edited by Sarah F. Hughes. Boston, 1902.
Historical Annals of Naushon. Collected from Mansion House Island books.
Privately printed 1901. Reprinted 1928.
Early History of Naushon Island. A.F. Emerson. Privately printed 1935.
Reprinted 1981.
Growing up at Uncatena. A.F. Howland. Privately printed 1974.
Autobiography — The Early Years. W. Cameron Forbes. Privately printed 1976.
An Anthology of Naushon. Edited by K.A. Forbes and E.W. Gregg. Privately printed 1979.

